## IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences
Corporation


## CIHM/ICMH Microfiche Series.

# CIHM/ICMH Collection de microfiches. 

Cenadian Instituta for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.


Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleurCovers damaged/
Couverture endommagéeCovers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque
Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur
Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents
Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/
La re liure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distortion le long de la marge intérieure

Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.

Additional comments:/
Commentaires supplémentaires:

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur
Pages damaged/
Pages endommagéesPages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquéesPages detached/
Pages détachées


Showthrough/
Transparence
Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impressionIncludes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaireOnly edition available/
Seule édition disponiblePages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.


The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

- Library of the Public

Archives of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol $\rightarrow$ (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol $\nabla$ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:

L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

La bibliothèque des Archives publiques du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grend soin, compte tenu de la condition et de le netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la derniére page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apperaîtra sur la derniere image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole $\rightarrow$ signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole $\nabla$ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.


## HIFE OF MAHOMMED

FOUNDER

OF
THL RELIGION OF ISLAM, AND OF THE
EMPIRE OF THE SARACENS.

BY'
THE REV. GEORGE BUSH, A. M.

## FIRST CANADA EDITION.

NIAGARA :
HENRY CHAPMAN, Publisher-SAMUEL HERON, Printer.
1831.

## PRENACLE.

'lue present work lays claim to no higher character than that of a compilation. This indeed must necossarily be the chatacter of $\triangle N Y$ worls attempted, at this day, upon the same subject. All the accessible facts in the life and fortunes of the Arabian prophet have long since been given to tho world. New theories and speculations, moral and philosophical, founded upon those facts, and many of them richly doserving attention, aro freyuently propounded to the reflecting, but they add littlo or nothing to the amount of our positivo information. All therefore that can now be expected is such a selection and urrangement and invostment of the loading particulars of tho lmposter's history, as shall convey to the English reader, in a correat and concentrated form, those details which are otherwise diffused through a great number of rave books, and couclied in several different languages. Such a work, discroetly pre pared, would supply, if we mistake not, a very considorable desideratum in our lan-guage-one which is begmning to be more sensibly felt than ever, and which the spirit of the age loudly requires to have supplied. How far the prosent sketch may go towards mecting the demand, it becomes others than tho writer to judge. He has aimed to make the most judicious use of the materials belore lim, and from the whole mass to elicit a candid moral estimate of the character of tho founder of Islam. llo one respect he may venture to assure the reader he will find tho plan of the ensuiug pages an improvoment upon proceding Memoirs; and that is, in tho careful collation of chaptors of the Koran with the events of the narrative. He will probably find the history illustrated to an unexpected extent from this source-a circumstance, which, while it serves greatly to anthenticate the facts related, imparts a zest also to the tenor of the narrative scarcely to be expected from the nature of the theme.

In order to preserve the continuity of the story from being broken by incessant reference to authorities, the following catalogue is submitted, which will present at one view the principal works consulted and employed in preparing the present Life : -Sale's Koran, 2 vols.; Universal IIstory, Mod. Series, vol. i. ; Gibbon's Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, vol. iii. ; Prideaux's Life of Muhomet ; Boulainvillier's do.; do. in Library of useful Knowledge, No. 45; Hayle's Ilistorical Dictionary, Art. Mahomet ; Hottinger's Historia Orientalis: Abul-Fvragii Itistoria Dynastarum, Pocock's Transl.; Morgan's Mahometanism explained, 2 vols.; Forster's Mahome' tanism Unveiled, iz vols. ; D'Merbelo's Bibliotheque Orientale; Rycant's Present State of the Ottoman Fmpire; Ockley's Ilistory ot the Saracens, 2 vols.; White's Bampton Lectures; Iree's 'Translation of tho Rev. IH. Martyn's Gontroversial 'I'racts; Whitaker's Origin of Arianism; Faber's Sacred Calendar of Prophecy: 3 vols.; Buckingham's, Kieppel's, Burakhardt's and Madden's 'Travels in tho East.

On the subject of the Arabic proper names so frequently occurring in this work, it may be usoful to the English reader to be informed, that Ac. is a quivalent to our definite article The. Thus, Alcoran is composed of two distinct words signifying The Koras, of which the last only onght to be retained in English. Again, Ebn is the Arabic word for Son, is is Bint or Binto, for Daughten, and with the particle Al after it, accordmg to the Arabic usige, Feno'l is, The Sen. So Abu, Father, with the article atter it, Abu'l, the Father. Thus, Said Ebn Ozediah Abu Umpi, is, Sail, the son of Odediah fatmpr of Omri ; it being usual with the Arabs to take their names of distinction from ther sons as well as their fathors. In liko manner, ¿Ebno'l Atir, is the son ov Athir; Abv'l Abbas the father of Abras: and as Abd signifies servant, ind Ablah, Gud; Abdo'lail or Abdalaf is, Servant of God; Аbdo'l Shems, Servant of the Sun, de.

The deciding between the different modes, in which the prophets's name is, or ought to be, written and the adoption of the most eligible, has been a matter of perplexing dcliberation. Upon consulting the Greek Byzantine historians, it appears

## PWEFACE.

that tho smme diversity of appellation which mow presails, has of thated for seven centuries. In some at thom we meet with Manseris, from which comos our Mano. met, tho most popular and hamiliar tith to tho Finghsh ear ; and in othors Machomben. Other varieties ansong ancient authors might drubthess be specified. But it will brs obsorved, for the most part, that writers ewpaintod with thes Arabic tongue and who Lave drawn their materials diecely from the original tumitains, as well as the great body of recent Oricntal trivellers, are very unamous in adopting the orthography of the mame which appoirs in our title pagre. If tha: Arithe usige be in fuct the pro. ner standard, ns will probably be minitted, Mahomed, instead of either Mahome?, Mahomed, or Mahommed, is tho genuine form of the mane, and tho mode ia which"t should be uniformly written and pronomed. 'I'lie fiot, that the oxampho of mos Otiental scholars of tho present day has given enrreney to this lizm, and the prohability that it will finally supplant all oblers, has induced us, on the whole, to alopt it, though wilh eonsideraible hesitation.

The following list of names and tithes frequenty ocourring in comerion with the affiurs of the East, together with then ctymological import, will not be deemed inappropriate to the object of the presont work.

Mobammed, Ahmed.-F'rom llamad; praised highly celebrafed, iffustrions, glorious.

Aloslcma, Musenhana, Islam, Islamisu, -All from the same root, Asham; sighifying to yield up, dedicate, consecrmo entirely to the service of religion.

Koran.-From Kara, to read ; the zeading, legend, or that which oucht to bo rew.
Caliph.-A successor; tirm the llebreve Chytaph, to be changed, to succeet, is pass round a revolution.

Sulan.-Originally from the Chaldaie. Soltan; signifying iuthonity, dominios principality.

Vizier,-An assistant.
1ladj, - Pilgrimage; Madji : one who makes the pilgrimage whecea.
Saraces.-Ltymology donblul; sulpused to be tion Siscal, to steid; a phomer. -r $r_{2}$ a robiber.

Hujiru, or Mejra.-'Ihe Flight; "pplied emphatica!ly to Mohanmed's flight froin Mecea to Medina.

Mutti.-The prineipal hend of the Monmmedam religion, and the resolver of itl donbtial points ot the law. - An othice of yreat dignity in the 'lurkish empire.
 to expomd a passago of the Koran. 'Illey, at the same time, Hisually diblow sume more lucrative ernfoyment.

Moollahs forn what is ealled the Ulema, or body of docters in thatogy and juris. prodence, who a:c entusted with the guardiansip of the latrs of the empire, and from whose momber tha Multi is churen.

Emir.-Lincal dccendants at the Prophet himsell, distingnished by weariag
 have special immunties on the seare of their descent, and ont of them carries the green standard of the Prophet whan the Grand Stignior appears in tay pable solemmity.

Pasha. - The title given to the prosincin! eremors. $A$ Pinha is to a province or pahalie, what the Sultan is to the empire, expept that the jurticial power is in hands of the cadis, ite provincial magistrates. The rans of a P'isina are the stamb dmeds which he is allowed to carry ; one of threo taily is one oi three siambart', which number gives the power of life and death.

 the best informent mum of the notion.

I taned fur seven comes our Malfo. others Machombib. erl. But it will bes we tonerue and who $s$ well as tho great ng the orthogribliy be in fact the pro. of cither Mishome?, lie mode is which it he examplos of $\mathrm{mos}^{\circ}$ and, and the prohs. o whole, to anlopt it,
in combexion with will not he ckember
hehrated, illustrions,
a root, Aslma ; sigui. ruligion.
hich ourht to bo rend. anged, is succeed, in
ilu!hmity, hominime
re 10 Mreces.
$\therefore$ to steal; a phander.
Whanmed's flight from
and the resolver of ath 'urlish enpire. duty il is oucasionally , H, mally sollow somb
; in llustogy ant juris. the laws of the em.
nguished by wearing f"Johsmansal. 'I'hey 4 of lisem catries lie pypuars ia any pratu

Casla is to a province julicial power is in L'ishat are lles stame. ot three stambatis?
ancular of thas Otto-
at thi: thme rontans
the lite and tortunes of this remarkable mam. It will not, of course, be expected that, at this distance of time and romoteness of place, a mass of facts entirely new should be communicated to the world. The discreet use of the materials already extant is all that can now bo reasonaWy required or attempted. Yet we are not without hope, that in one aspect, at least, ott theme may present itselt arrayed in a character of hioveity and of unwonted interest ; we mean, in its connexions with Christianity. An enlightencu Christian estimate of the prohpot of Arabia and his religion is, we believe, seldom formed, simply because the subject has seldom been so presented as to afford the means of such an estimate. $\Lambda$ brief sketch, therefore, of the state of Christianity at the time of Mohammed's appearance, especially in that region of the wor'd in which his imposture took its rise, will properly invite the reader's attention at the oatset of the work. 'rhis will show more clearly the inteuded providential bearings of the entire fabric of Mohammedan delusion upon the church of Christ; and, apart from this particular view of it, we are persinded that an entirely co:rect or adequato judgment of lslanism cannot be formed.
Statc af Christianity in the Sixth Century, particularly in the Eastcra Churches.
The distinction of Eastern and Western churches, in ecclesiastical listory, is founted upen a similar geographical division of the Roman empire under the emperors, into two great departments; the one incluLuing the countries of Asia or the East, which had beon subjected to the Roman arms, and the other those of Europe, more properly denominated the West. This dstiaction became still more common from the days of Constantine, who removed the seat of the empire from Rome to Constantinople, thoagh the final and complete, rupture between the Greek and Latin churches did not ocear till the seventh century.
Over the largest portion of the lioman empire tho Christian religion was carly propagated, and for two or three centuries subsisted in a yent degrec of ite original simplicity and purity. Flourishing ehurchwhere planted by the A postlos themselves in the different provinces of lsia Minor, and along the eastern limits of Europe; from which " the rord sounded out" to the adjacent territorics with a multiplying power, o that the canse and lingtom of the Rodecmer continued to spread ang after its first promagators lad entered into their rest. But a gradCal degeneracy supervened upon the primitive pusperity of the church. buring the lourtin century "the mystery of iniquic;"," which had been parg before working in secret, began to discover itself more openly, Iud though the Christians, by the laws of the empire, were exempted fom persecution, yet from this time forward a growing declension and dection amoug them is to be traced throngh every subsequent period, II at length, in the seventh ceatury, "the man of sin" became fully recaled, and, according to the predictions of holy writ, took his scat "as fod in the temple of ciod, opposing and exalting himself above all that ealled diod, or is worshipped." It was about the period at which folammed arose that this feaful apostary had attained its height-

## HNHEADDECHIGN.

No revolution recorded in history, if we exeept that effected by the religion of the Gionem, has introluced greater changes into the state of the civelized womth!, then that which has grown out of the rise, progress, and permancoce of Mohammenaism. The history and character therefore of this religion becomes ill shject of latulable curiosity with every enlightened mad. Consideredmercly as a department of the gevo eral annals of the worid, apart from any comesion with the true relig ion, it furmshes some of the most interesting records of the human race But when viewed as a part ot the great chain of providential and pre dicted events, designed to have a direct bearing upon the state of the Christian church, through, the whole period of its disastrous prevalerice, it urges a new and stronger daim upom our attention. By many distir. guished writers, who have deeply whened it: origin, enenins, and histo ry, tho religion of the Kwsun is condidenty regarded rather as a Chris. tian heresy, or the product of a 6hastim heresy, than as a heathenshe porstition.* Consequently, ita fite is involved in that of all false do. trines which have corrmpted the fionpel; and as far as the disclosures

 the truth, the ege is i.threhy mond with deepening interest and ansie ty to "hose region ot 'ine ghobe where this religion has so long prevat ed.

Put in proportion to hice interest inspired in the general subject Mohammedmism, is that which is felt in the hife, character, and action of its founder. 'ihat an obseme individual, sprung from the rovia tribes of Arabia, following no higher occupation than that of a caravar trader, possessing no peculiar advantages of mental culture, nor distia guished in the ontset by any precminence of power or anthority, shoul yet have hoen enabled, in spite of numerous ohstacles, to fomed suchas cxtensive cmpire over the minds, as weil as prasons, of millions of the haman race, and that this dmminion shath have been continued fo more than twelve handred years, presents a phonomenon which increas es our wonder the more shatily it is contemplated.

It is propesee! in the chising proge; focalibit the prominent events
*"Hence," sys the :ormond emmplary Bede, "Mahometanism has frequen iy leen accombed athisthan heres; : and as it hat his origin in Christianity, zo Christ it looks in the e d. Fo; actorting to the creed of the Mahometans, Jesus, expected to d. scend to earth, to embrace tie religion of Mathommet, to slay Ant chts and to reign with his samts." The same anhority attirns, "Hat the Malnmelas are nearer to Christimity than may of the ancecnt heretics: the Corinhlians, fino ties, and Mmanheres.
that "the waseressors hat come to the fill"-and the degree to whel the nommal chureh had departed from the standard of fitht, morals, and worship contrined in tho Scriptures, well nigh surpmsses belief. 'lich it was that those fonl corruptions and superstitions were introdnced into the church, which finally grew to such a pitel: of enormity as to merasion the separation of father and the other reformers from what they deemed and denominated the commanion of Antichrist. At this period it was, that the veneration for departed saints and martyrs-the dolatrous worship of images and relics-the rendering livine honours to the Virgin Mary-the doctrine of pargatory-and the adoration of he Cross, had become firmly established, and thus the lustre of the (iospel suthered a dark eelipse, and the essence of Christianity was lost under a load of ide and superstitions ceremonies.
In the eastemparts of the empire, especially Syria and the countries bordering upon Arabia, as well as in some parts of Arabia itself, these evils were argravated hy the mmerous sects and heresies that prevailed, and by the incessant controversial wars which they waged with eaoh other. 'The church was torn to pieces by the furious disputes of the Arians, Sabellians, Nestorians, Eutychians, and Collyridiaus, by whom the great doctrines of Christianity were so confommed with metaphysical subtletics and the jargon of schools, that they ceased, in great measure, to be regarded as a rule of life, or as pointing out the only way of salvation. The religion of the Gospel, the blessed source of peace, bove, and unity among men, became, by the perverseness of sectarics, a firebrand of burning contention. Council after council was calledcanon after canon was enacted-prelates were traversing the country in every direction in the prosecution of party purposes, resorting to every base art, to obtain the authoritative establishment of their own peculiar tenets, and the condemnation and suppression of those of their adversaies. The contests also for the episcopal office ran so high, particularyin the West, that the opposing partics repeatedly had reccurse to vidence, and, in one memorable instance, the interior of a Christian hurch wns stained by the blood of a number of the adherentes of the ival bishops, who fell victims to their ficrec contentions. Yet it is littlo bhe wondered at that these places of preferment should have been so treedily"sought after by men of corropt minds, when we learn, that they ppened the diriect road to wealth, luxury, and priestly power. Ancient listorians represent the bishops of that dey, as enriched by the presents of the opulent, as riding abroad in pompous state in chariots and sedans, ind surpassing, in the extravagance of their feants, the sumptuousuess frinces; while, at the same time, the most barbarous ignorance was ast overspreading the nations of Christendom, the ecclesiastical orders hemselves not excepted. Among the bishops, the legitimate instructors ind defenders of the church, numbers were to be found incapable of composing the poor discourses which their office required them to deiver to the people, or of subscribing the decrees which they passed in heir councils. The little learning in vogue was chiefly confined to the tonks. But they, instcad of cultivating science, or diffising any kind
of useful knowledge, squandered their time in the study of the fibinlons legends of protended suints and martyrs, or in composing historics co qually fubulous.

This woful corruption of doctrine and morals in the clergy was fol. lowed, as might be expected, by a very general depravity of the como mon people; and though we cannot suppose that God left himself alto. gether without witnesses in this dark period, yet the number of the truly faithful had dwindled down to a mere remnant, and the wide-spreadinis defection scemed to call aloud for the judgment of heaven. In view of this deplorable state of Christianity, minterior to the appearance of Mithommed, we are prepared to admit at onee the justness of the following remarks upon the moral eads designed to be accomplished by Providence in permitting this desolating scourge to arise at this particula: crisis of the world.
"At length," says Prideans, "having wearied the patience and long. suffering of God, he raised up the Saracens to be the instruments of his wrath to punish them for it ; who, taking advantuge of the weakness of their power, and the distraction of counsels which their divisions had caused among them, overran, with a terrible devastation, all the castern provinces of the Roman empire. And having fixed that tyranny o. ver them which hath ever since aflicted thoso parts of the world, turued every where their churches into mosques, and their worship into a horrid superstition; and instead of that holy religion whioh they had a. bused, forced on them the abominable imposture of Mahomet.-Thus those once glorious and most flourishing churches, for a punishment of their wickedness, being given up to the insult, ravage, and scorn of the :worst of enemies, wero overwhelmed with such terrible destruction as reduced them to that low and miserable condition onder which they hare ever since groaned; the all-wise Providenco of God seeming to continue them thus unto this day under the pride and persecution of Mahometan tyranny, for no other end but to be an example and warning unto others against the wickedness of separation and division."
$y$ of the fabuloms sing listoricas c-
, clorgy was folo avity of tho comI left himself alto. enber of the truly e wide-spreading aven. In view of pearance of $\mathrm{M}_{10}$ ss of the following pplished by Proviint this particula:
patience and long. instriments of his of the weakness of heir divisions had ation, all the castxed that tyranny o. of the world, turueir worship into a 1 whioh they hada-Mahomet.-Thus or a punishment of e, and scorn of the ible destruction as jer which they have secming to continus ion of Mahometan arning unto others

# HIEE OF MOHAMMED. 

## CHAPIER I.

National Descent of the APabs-Yrueed to be from Islimael, Sion of Abrehain.

Iv tracing the genenfogy of nations to their primitive frunders, the book of Genesis is a document of incatimable vilue. With thoso who do not hesitate to receive this and the other inspired books of the Scriptures an mothentic vouchers for historical facts, the mational descent of the Arabs from Ishmace, the son of Abrahani, is a point which will not admit of dispute. 'The fuct of this derivation, however, has been seriously brought into question by several skeptical writers, particularly by the celebrated historian of the Deeline and Fall of the Roman Empire. With his usual dexterity of insinuation, he assails the united authority of Scripture history and Arabian tradition, respecting the pes igree of this remarkable people. Yot in no caso does he undertake, in a formal mamer, to disprove the fact to which he still labuurs to give the air of a fiction." A suecinct view, therefore, of tho testimonies which go to establish the Ishmaelitish origin of the Arab, may form no unsuitable introduction to the present work, detailing the life and character of the individual who has done so much towards rendering the race illustrious.
From the narrative of Moses we learn not only the parentage, birth, and settlement of Ishmael in Arabia, but the fact also of a covenant made with Abraham in his behalf, accompanied with a prophecy rospecting his decendants, singularly analogous to the prophetic promise concerning the more favoured sced of Isaac. "And Abraham said unto God, O that Ishmael might live before thee! And God said, Sarah, thy wife, shall bear thee a a son indeed; and thou shalt call his name Isaac: and I will establish my covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him. And for Ishmael, I have heard thee : Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation.' $\dagger$ In like manner, it will be recollected, the nation of Israel sprung from the twelve sons of Jacob, and was divided into twelve tribes. In a subsequent part of the Mosaic records we find the notice of the incipient fulfilment of this prediction concerning tho posterity of Ishmael. "And these are the names of the 60 ss of Ish-

[^0]mael, by their names, according to their gencrations: 'I'he lirst-born of Ishmael, Nebajoth, and Ledar, and Adbeel, and Mib sam, and Mishma, and Dumah, and Massah, Hadar, and Tema, Jetur, Napish, and Kedemah.: These are the sons of Ishmael, and these are their names, by their towns, and by their castles: twelve princes according to their nations. $\%$ Therr geographical residence is clearly ascertained in a sub. sequent verse. "And they dwelt from Havilah unto Shur, that is before Egypt as thou goest towards Assyria.' $\dagger$ Havilah and Shur, by the consent of the best sacred geographers, are allowed to have com. posed part of the region between the Euphrates and the Red Sea, deno. minated Arabia. $\ddagger$ From causes now unknown, the tribes of Nebajoth and Kedar appear to have acquired an ascendency over the rest, so that the whole country is sometimes designated from one, sometimes from the other of them, just as the entire nation of Israel is sometimes called Judah from the superier numbers, power, or influence of that tribe.Among the ancient profane historians also we find the names of Nabitheans and Kcdarenes frequently employed as an appellation of the roving inhabitants of the Arabian deserts. 'This testimony is directly confirmed by that of Josephus. After reciting the names ef the twelve cons of Ishmael, he adds:-"These inhabit ali the country extending from the Euphrates to the Red Sea, giving it the name of the Nabatc. nean region. These are they who have given names to the whole race of the Arabs with their tribes." $\$$ In the fourth century, Jerome, in his commentary on Jeremiah, deseribes Kedar as a country of the Arabian desert, inhabited by the Ishmaelites, who were then termed Saracens, The same father, in his commentary on Isaiah, again speaks of Keda: as the country of the Saracens, who in Scripture are called Ishmaelites; and observes of Nebajoth, that he was one of the sons of Ishmael, after whose names the Arabian desert is called.

Another source of evidence in relation to the national descent of the Arabs, is their having practised, from time immemorial, the rite of circumeision. Joscphus has a very remarkable passage touching the origin of this rite among the Jows and Arabs, in which he first makes mention of the circumcision of Isaac; then introduces that of Ishmael; and states concerning each, as matter of universal and immemorial no. toriety, that the Jews and the Arabians severally practised the rite, conformably with the precedents given them, in the persons of their respective fathers. His words are these :-_" Now when Sarah had completed her ninetieth, and Abraham his hundred year, a son (Isaac) is born unto them: whom they forthwith circumcise on the eighth day; and from him the Jews derive their custom of circumcising children after the same interval. But the Arabians administer circumcision at the close of the thirteenth year: for Ishmael, the founder of their nation, the son of Abraham by his concubine, was circumcised at that time of life.'ll Similar to this is the testimony of Origen, who wrote in the

[^1]I'he lirst-born of m , and Mishma, apish, and Kedetheir names, by rding to their nartained in a sub. Shur, that is belah and Shur, by ed to have com. e Red Sea, deno. bes of Nebajoth the rest, so that sometimos from sometimes called co of that tribe. c names of Nabi. appellation of the timony is directly tmes of the twelve country extending ne of the Nabate. to the whole race rry, Jerome, in his itry of the Arabian termed Saracens. n speaks of Keda: called Ishmaelites; pis of Ishmael, af.
nal desccent of the ial, the rite of cire touching the orich he first makes es that of Ishmael; ad immemorial notised the rite, conons of their respecarah had completon (Isaac) is born eighth day; and ing children after rcumcision at the er of their nation, ed at that time of who wrote in the

[^2]third century of the Christian era. "The natives of Judea," says, he, " gencrally circumcise their children on the eighth day; but the Ishmaelites who inhabit Arabia universally practise circumcision in the thirteenth year. For this history tells us concerning them." This writer, like Josephus, lived near the spot, and had the best oppertunities of obtaining correct information respecting the Arabians. It is evident, therefore, beyond contradiction, from his words, that the fact of their derivation from Abraham through Ishmael was an established point of historical record, and not of mero traditionary fame, at the period at which he wrote,
The direct testimony to the Ishmaclitish extraction of the Arabs furnished by the earliest records of the Bible, and confirmed as we see by foreign authorities, is strikingly corroborated by repeated references, bearing upon the same point, in later inspired vriters, particularly the prophets. Through the long course of sacred histery and prophecy, we mect with reiterated allusions to existing tribes of Arabia, descending from Ishmael, and bearing the names of his several sons, among which those of Nebajoth and Kcdar usually predominate. Thus the Prophet Isaiah, in foretclling the future conversion of the Gentiles, makes mention of the Gentiles, makes mention of the "rams of Nebajoth," the eldest, and "all the flocks of Kedar ," the second of the sons of Ishmael ; that is, of the Arab tribes descending from these brothers; a passage which not only affords strong proof of our main position, but conveys also an intimation of the future in-gathering of the Mohammedan nations into the Christian Church. The same Prophet, in another part of his predictions, notices "the cities of the wilderness, that Kedar doth inhabit." And again, when denouncing impending calamity upon the land of Arabia, he foretells how "all the glory of $\boldsymbol{K} c d a r$ shall fail ;" he employs the name of this single tribe as synonymous with that of the entire peninsula. In this connexion the words of the Psalmist may be cited :-Wo is me that I sojourn in Mesech, that I dwell in the tents of Kedar." These words are supposed by some of the Jewish commentators to have been written by David, under the influence of inspiration, as the prophetic plaint of the Christian Church, labouring and Groaning, as it sometimes done, under the yoke of Mohammedan oppressicn. In Jeremiah, also, we find mention of Kedar. He speaks of it as "the wealthy nation that dwellcth without carc, which have neither gates nor bars, which dwell alone." Ezekiel, moreover, prophesies conjointly of "Arabia and all the princes of Kedar." An allusion to Tema, the ninth son of Ishmael, as the name of a warlike people of Arabia, occurs as early as in the book of Job: "The troups of Tema looked, the companies of Shoba waited for them." Lastly, the tribess sprung from Jetı. $r$ and Napinish, the tenth and eleventh sons of Ishmael, are commemorated in the first book of Chronicles, who are there called Hagarites, from Hagar, the mother of Ishmael, and of whom a hundred thousand male captives.

When to this mass of Scripture evidence of the descent of the Arabs from Ishmael we add the acknowledged coincidence between the nation.
al character of this people in every age, and the predicted persomal chat racter of their progenitor-" And he will be a wild man; his hand will be against every man, and every man's hand against him"-and the fact, that the Ishmaclitish orimin of the Arabs has ever been the constant and unvarying tradition of that people themselves, the subject scarcely admits of a more irrefragable proof. There are cortainly few landmarks of history moro universal or more permanent than the names of countries affixed by original settlers, or flowing from them, and we may as justly question the derivation of Hungary from the Huns, France from the Franks, Turkey from the Turks, or Juden from Jukah and the Jews, as those of the several districts of Arabia from the respective sons of Ishmael.*

[^3]
## CHAPTTR II.

Birth and Parentage of Mohammed-Loses his Farents in early Childo hood-Is placed under the care of hie uncle Abu Talch-Goes into Syria on a traling expedition with his uncle at the age of thirtsenEnters the scrvice of Calijat, a widow of Necou, whom he aftervards marrics.

Monammed, the Legislator of Arabia, the Founder of the Moslem or Mohammedan religion, and thence dignified by himself and by his followers with the title of Prophet and Apostle of God, was born at Mecca, a city of Arabia, A. D. 569.* His lincage, notwitbstanding that many of the earlier Cluistion writers, under the influence of inveterate prejudice against the prophet and his religion, have represented his origin as base and ignoble, is clearly shown to have been honourable and illustrious; at least, when rated by the common standard of distinction among his countrymen. The ancient Arabians, deriving their pedigree from Ishmael, and inheriting the nomatic habits of their ancostors, had from time immemorial been divided into a number of separate independont tribes, roving at large over the immonse sandy regions of which their country is composed, except where here and there a few thousands of them were gathered into cities, and eagaged in merchandise. Some of these tribes, from varions causes, were more numerous, powerful, and renowned than others. 'I'hat of Koreish, from the founder of which Mohammed was in a direct line descended, had long been accounted
*Other authorities place his tirth in A. D. 5r1. The precise year cannot be de. termined with certainty.
d personal cita. ; his hand will "-and the fact, the constant and eet scareely adew landmurks of nes of countries we may as justly rance from tho h and the Jers, spective sons of
ple discussiou of the
ats in early Cliaid-Waleb-Giocs into age of thipten$a$, echom he after.
of the Moslem or If and by his folwas born at Mecwithstanding that ence of inveterate presented his orian honcurable and dard of distinction fing their pedigree ecir ancestors, had ecparate independregions of which re a few thousands chandise. Some morous, powerful, 3 founder of which g been accounted se year cannot be de.
may trust to the same authorities, discovered the most wonderful presagos. He was no sooner boru than he fell prostrate, in a posture of humble adoration, praying devoutly to his Creator, and suying, "God is great! There is no God but God, and I am his prophet!" By these ${ }^{2}$ nd many other supernatural signs, equally natounding, is the prophet's nativity se:d to have been marked. To some of them it would indeed appeer $\mathrm{I}^{\prime}$ the carlier Christians gave an honest credence; with this differenci nowever, between their belief and that of his followers, that while the latter ascribed them without hesitation to the hand of God, giving in this manner a gracious attestation to the prophetic charactur of lis servant, the former referred them directly to the agency of the uevil, wio might naturally be supposed, they thought, to work some special wonders on the present occasion. Upon the narrative of these miracnlous phenomenas the reader will form his own jadgment. They are meltioned in the absence of all autientic intormation touching the period and the event in question. Until the facts allegel are proved, by competent historical testimony, to have taken place, it is scarcely necessary to call in the aid of divine or diabolical agency to account for them; an it is much easier to innagine that an imposition or illusion may have been practised upon the first reporters, or that the whole oatalogue of worders is a mere fabrication of interested partisans, than that the ordimary course of nature should have been disturbed at this crisis.
The Arabic biographers of the prophet, moreovor, inform us that Abtol Motalleb, his grandfathor, the seventh day after the birth of the fild, gave a great entertaimment, to which ine invited the principal men (the Koreish, who, after the repast was over, desired lim to give the frant a name." Abdol Motalleb inmediately replieci-" I name this child Nohammed." The Koreish grandees at once expressed thoir surprise bat he did not call his grandson, ciccording io custom, by a name which ad belonged to some one of the fomily. Bui he persisted in the selecpo he had made, saying, "May the ilnost Hig! giority in Heaven him hom he has created on carth!" alludug to the name Mohammed, thich signifies praised or glorified.
At the early age of two years Mohammed lost his father; and fur enas after, his mother. The helpless orphan, now cast upon the kindenof his relations, was taken into the thuse and fumily of his grandther, under whose guardian care he remained hut two years, when to vencrable Motalleh himself was also called to pay the debt of nare. In a dying charge, he confided this tender plant of the ancient bock of the Koreish to the fathiful hands of Abis Tolst, the eldest of his pns and the successor of his uuthority. "tly denrest, best beloved son" thus history or tradition reports the tenor of bis instructions"-". to y charge I leave Moliammed, the son of thine own brother, strictly commended, whose natural father the Lord hath been pleased to keto himself, with the intent that this deer child should become ours. adoption; and much dearer ought he to be unto us than merely an fopted son. Receive him, therefore, at my dying hande, with the me sin ere love and tender bowels with which I deliver him to thy re. H nour, love, and cherish him as much, or even more than if
the most noble of them all, and his ancestors, for several generations, had ranked among the princes of Mecca, and the kecpers of the keys of the Caaba, ite sacred temple. His father's name was Abuallah, one of the thirteen sons of Abdol Motalleb, the chief personage in his day among the Koreish, and inheriting from his father Hashom the principal place in the government of Mecca, and succeeding him in the custody of the Caaba. This Hashem, the great-grandfather of Mohamined, was the most distinguished name in all the line of his predecessors, and from him not only is the appellation of Hashemites bestowed upon the kindred of the prophet, but even to this day, the chief magistrate, both at Mecca and Medira, who must always be of the race of Molammed, is invariably styled "The Prince of the Hashemites." The name of Mohammed's mother was Amina, whose parentage was traceable also to a distinguished family of the same tribe. Her lot was envied in gain. ing the hand of the son of Abdol Motalleb, as the surpassing beauty o: his person is said to have ravished the hearts of a hundred maidens of Arabia, who were left, by his choice of Amina, to sigh over the wreck of their fondest hopes.
Abdallal, though the son of a rich and princely father, was possess. ed of but little wealth, and as he died while his son was an infant, or, as some say, before he was born, it is probable that that little was seized with the characteristic rapacity of the Arabs, and shared among his twelve surviving brothers, the powerful uncles of Mohammed. Although the laws of the Koran, in respect to inheritances, promulgated by the prophet himself, breathe more of the spirit of equity and kindness; yet the pagan Arabs, previous to his time, as we learn from Eastern writere, were wont to treat widows and orphans with great injustice, frequenty denying them any share in the inheritances of their fathers and husbands, under the pretenee that it ought to be distributed among those only who were able to bear arms, and disposing of widows, even against their own consent, as a part of their husband's possessions. The fatherles Mohammed, accordingly, faring like the rest of his countrymen, received, in the distribution of the patrimony, no more than five camed and an Ethiopian female slave.
The Mosiem writers, in order to represent the birth of their pretend ed prophet as equally marvellous with that of Moses or of Cbrist, the ancient messengers of God who preceded him, have reported a tissuled astonishing prodigies said to have occurred in connexion with that event If the reader will receive their statements with the same implicit fait with which they seem to be delivered, he must acknowledge, that at the moment when the favoured infant was ushered into the world, a flood ol light burst forth with him and illuminated every part of Syria; that thy waters of the Lake Sawa were entirely dried up, so that a city was buil upon its bottom; that an earthquake threw down fourtecen towers of the king of Persia's palace; that the sacred fire of the Persians was extim guished, and all the evil spirits which had inhabited the moon and stag were expelled together from their celestial abodes, nor could they eve after animate idols or deliver oracles on earth. The child also, if ":
eral generations, eers of the keys of as Abdallah, one sonage in his day ashem the princing him in the cusaer of Mohammed, predecessors, and bestowed upon the of magistrate, both ce of Mohammed, es." The name of was traceable also was envied in gain. urpassing beauty of nundred maidens o? sigh over the wreck
ather, was possess was an infant, or, as hat little was seized 1 shared annong his ohammed. Although promulgated by the y and kindness; yet rom Eastern writere injustice, frequenty athers and husbands, nong those only who , even against theif ns. The fatherless his countrymen, re. pre than five cames
irth of their pretendses or of Christ, the e reported a tissuoo: xion with that event e same implicit failh howledge, that at the the world, a floodol It of Syria; that the that a city was buill urtcen towers of the Persians was extin the moon and star nor could they erea te child also, if II
he had sprung from thine own loins; for all the honour thou showest unto him shall be trebled unto thec. Be more than ordinarily careful in thy trentment towards hlm, for it will be paid thee with interest. Give him the preference hefore thine own children, for he exceedeth them and all mankind in excellency and perfection. Take notice, that whensoever he calleth upon thee, thou answer him not as an infant, as his tender nge may require, but ns thou wouldst reply to the most aged and vencrable person when he asketh thee any question. Sit not down to thy repasts of any sort socvel, either alone or in company, till thy worthy nephew Mohammed is sented at the table betore thee; neither do thou ever offer to taste of any kind of viands, or even to stretch forth thine hand towards the same, until he hnth tasted thereof. If thou observest these my injunctions, thy groods shall alvays increase, and in no-wise be diminished."
Whether Ab: Taleb recognised in the deposite thus solemnly committed to his trust an object of such high destiny and such profound reneration as his father's language would imply, we are not informed; but there is good evidence that he gcted towarils his nephew the part ol'a lind friencl and protector, giving him an education, scanty indeed, but equal to that usually received by his countrymen. His followers, it is true, in order to magnify their prophet's supernatural gifts, and render the composition of the Koran in greater miracle, generally affirm that he wns wholly illiterate, neither able to read or write. In this, indeed, they are authorised hy the pretenslons ol Mohammed himself, who says, "Thus !inve we sent down the book of the Koran unto thee. Thou conldst not read any book before this; neither couldst thou write it with thy right hand : then had the gainsayers justly doubted of the divine original thereof." "Believe, therefore, in God and his apostle, the illiterate prophet." But in the Koran, a complete fabric of imposture, the last thing we are to expert is un honest adherence to truth. There is abundant evidence from the pages of this spurious reveiation iself, that writing wos an art in common use among the Arabs at that ine. The following precept concerning bonds puts it beyond question. 0 , true believers, when ye hind yourselves one to the cther in a debt or a certain time, write it down; and let a writer w:ite between you pcording to justice. and let not the writer refuse writing according to what God hat! taughi bim." Welearn also that Ali Taleb, the son of Abu Taleb, and consin of Mohammed, with whom the prophet passed is childhood, afterward herange one of his scribes. of whom he had number employed in making copies of the Koran as its successive portions were revealed to him. How did it happen that Abu Taleb hould have had his son instructed in writing, and not his nephew?The eity of Mecea, morsover, being a place of traffic, the merchants hust have hourly felt the want of some mode of recording their transctions; and as we are informed that Mohammed himself was for seeral years engaged in mercantile pursuits before he commenced the ropagation of a new religion, it is scarcely supposeable that he was naequainted with the use of letters.
Of the infancy, childhood, and youth of the future prophet no aubentie details have reached. The blank has indeed been copiously upplied by the fabulous legends of his votaries, hut as they are utterly oid of authority, they will not repay the trouble of transcription. Bepg destined by his uncle to the profession of a merchant, he was taken
th some affirm, at the age of titirteen, into Syria with Abu'Caleb's tra. ding caravan, in order to his being perlected in the business of his in. tended vocation. Upon the simple circumstance of this journey, the superstition of his followers hins grafted a sevies of miraculous omens ulf portending his future greatness. Among other things, it is suid by his historians, that upon bus arriving at Bozrah, seertain man named Boheira, H Nestorian monk, who is thought by Prideaux to be otherwise called Sicrgius, advanced through the crowd collected in the mar. ket-place, and, seizing him by the hand, exclaimed, "There will be something wonderful in this hoy; for when he nppronched he appearel covered with a clond." He is said to have affirmed also, that the drv trees under which he sut were every where instuntly covered with green lenves, which served hins for a shade, and that the mystic ssal of prophecy was impressed between his shoulders, in the form of a small luminous excresceace. According to othors, instead of a bright cloud being the criterion by which his subsequent divine mission was indica. ted, the mark by which Buheira knew him was the prophetic light whieh shone upon his fucc. This miraculous light, according to the traditions of the Mohammedums, wrs tirst placed upon Adam, and from him transmitted to each individual ia the line of his descendants, who sus. tained the character of a the mrophet. The hallowed radiance at length rested upon the head of Abroham, from whom it was divided into a two-fold emanation, the greater ar clearer descending upon Isaac and his seed, the less or otscurer to Ishmael and his posterity. The light in the fimily of Isanc is represputed as having been perpetuated in a constunt glow through a long line of'ins, ired messengers and prophets among the children of Israel; but that in the fumily of Ishmael is said to have been suppressed, and to have lain hidden through the whole tract of ages, from Ishmael down to the coming of Mohammed, in whom the sacred symbol was again revived, and now pointed out Ito Boleira the high destiny of him on whoso person it appeared. However inting sically vain and visionary this legent may be deemed, it may, neverthe less, be worth adverting to, as affording perhaps, in its remoter sources a hint of the origin of the nalo, which in most of the paintings or engrat ings of the Saviour is made to encircle his sacred brows.

When Abu Tuleb was abont to return with his caravan to Mecca, Be heira, it is said, again repeated his solemn premonition, coupled with charge, respecting the extraordinary youth. "Depart with this chith and take great care that he docs not fall into the hands of the Jews; fo your nephew will one day become a very wonderful person."

The early Christian writers havo laid hold of the narrative of thisif terview with the Syrian monk, as affording a clew to the true origi and authorship of the Koran. According to them, this Boheira, alis Sergius, who, they say, was an apostate Jew or Christian, instructe Mahommed in the histories and doctrines of the Bible, and that they concert laid a plan for creating a new religion, a motley compound Judaism and Christianity, to be carried into execution twenty years terward; and that accordingly the monk, rather than Mohammed, ise titled to the credit of the most important parts of the Koran. Others gain, deeming it altogether incredible that a youth of thirteen shouf

Abu'Taleb's tral. business of his in. this journey, the niraculous omens ings, it is suid by ertain man naimed deaux to bo otherIlected in the mar.
"There will be ached he appearel 1 also, that the drv mly covered with at the mystic spal the form of a simall ad of $a$ bright cloud mission was indicu. prophetic light which ling to the traditions uII, and from him cendants, who suls. dradiance at length was divided intoo ding upon Isaac and osterity. The ligh een perpeluated in sengers and prophet ly of Ishmael is said ${ }^{4}$ through the whole Mohammed, in whom inted out Ito Boliein ed. However intirin ed, it may, neverthe
nits - paintings source brows.
rravan to Mecca, Bnition, coupled with epart with this child ands of the Jews; if 1 person."
e narrative of this ix low to the true orig this Boheira, alif
Christian, instructu Bible, and that they motley compound ation twenty years an Mohammed, ise ne Koran. Others th of thirteen shou
have conceived the rast idea of forming and propagating a new religion, place this correspondence with Sergius at a later period of his life; that is to say, when he was not far from twenty years of age, at which time he is alleged to have taken a second journey into Syria. But, as wo shall sec hereafter, the question how tar Mohammed was nssisted by others in the composition of the Koran is not susceptible at the present day of a satisfactory solution.
The next remarkable event in the life of Mohamucd is his appearance in the character of a soldier. At the age of fourteen, or, as others say, nearer the age of twenty, he served under his uncle, who commanded the troops of , liis tribe, the Koreish, in their wars against the ival tribes of the Kenan and the Hawazan. They returned from the espedition victorious, and this circumstance doubtless tended to render die people of the tribe still more devoted to the uncle and the nephew, and to acquiro for Mohammed a notoriety which he was afterward enabled to turn essentially to his account.
From this time to the age of twenty-five he appears to have continued in the employ of Abu Taleb, engaged in mercantile pursuits. As he adranced in years there is reason to believe that his personal endowments, rtich were doubtless of a superior order, together with strong native powers of intellect, an acute observation, a ready wit, and pleasing adress combined to render him both popular and proninent among his ssociates. Such, at least, is the concurrent testimony of all his biogaphers, and we have no means of invalidating their statements. It is, powever natural to suppose, that a strong colouring would be put upon reery superior quality of a pretended messenger of God, sent to restorc he true religion to the world, and that he, who was by character a prohiet, should be represented by his adhorents as a paragon of all exterpal perfections. About this period, by the assistance of his uncle, he ras entered into the service of a rich trading widow of his native city, tho had been twice marricd, and whose name was Cabisail In the apacity of factor or agent to this his wealthy employer, he took a sefond journey of three years into Damascus and the neighbouring reions of Syria, in which he devoted himself so assiduously to the interNs of Cadijah, and managed the trust committed to him so entirely to er satisfaction, that upon his return she rewarded his fidelity with the itt of her hand and her fortune. It may be imagined, that in entering to this alliance, she was probably influenced by the family connexpns and the personal attractions of her suitor. But whatever were her potives, the uniou subsequently appears to have been one of genuine afaction on both sides; Mohammed never forgot the favours he had reeived from his benefactress, and never made her repent of having plaed her person and her fortune at his absolute dispesal. Although Cad2h, at the time of her marriage, was forty, and Mohammed not more man twenty-eight, yet till the age of sixty-four, when she died, sho enbyed the undivided affection of her husband; and that too in a country hero polygamy was allowed, and very frequently practised. By her o had eight children, of whom Fatima alone, his eldest daughter, sur-
vived hins. And such was the prophet's respect to the memory of his wife, that after her death he placed her in the rank of tho four perfet women.

## CAAP'IER III.

Mohammed forms the desig.t of palming a new Religion upon the world-Dith. cull to accomnt for this determination-Considerations suggested-Retires to the Cave of Hera-Announces to Cadijah the Visits of Gabriel with a portion of the Koran-She becomes a Convert-llis slaw progrcss in gain. ing Prosclytes-Cinrious Coincidence.

Being now raised by his marriage to an equality with the first citi: zens of Mecca, Mohammed was enabled to pass the next twelve years of his life in comparative aflluence and ease; and, until the age of forty, nothing remarkable distinguished the history of the future prophet. Itis probable, that he still followed the occupation of a merchant, as the 1 . sabian nation, like their ancestors the Ishmaclites, have always been greatly addicted to commerce. It was during this interval, however, that he meditafed and matured the bold design of palming a new religion upon the world. This therefore becomes, in its results, the most im. portant period in his whole life ; and it is greatly to bo regretted, that the policy of the impostor, and the ravages of time, havo doprived us of all sources of information, which might afford a satisfactory clew to the real origin of this design. The circumstances which first suggested it, the peculiar train of reflection which went to cherish it, the ends which he proposed to accomplish by it, together with the real agencies employed in bringing it forward, arc all matters wrapped in impenetia. ble mystery; yet these are the very points on which the inquiring mind, intent upon tracing great events to their primary sourcee, is most cager for information. At the present day, it is impossible to determine whe ther Mohammed commenced his carecr as a deluded enthusiast or a de. signing imposter. Those who have most profoundly considered the whole subject of Mohammedanism in its rise, progress, genius, and ff. fects, are, on this point, divided in their opinion.

On the one hand, it is supposed by some, that Mohammed was constitutionally addicted to religious contemplation-that his native tem. perament was strongly tinged with enthusiasm-and that he might origi. nally have been free from any sinister motve in giving scope to the innate propensities of his character. As the result of his retired speculations he might, moreover, it is said, have been sincerely persuaded in his own mind of the grand article of his faith, the unity of God, which in his opinion was violated by all the rest of the world, and, therefore might have deemed it a meritorious work to endcavour to liberate his
countrymen and his race from the bondage of error. Impelled by this motive in the outset, and being aided by a warm imagination, he might at length have come, it is affirmed, as enthissiasts have often done, to tho firm conviction, that he was destined by Providence to be the instrument of a groat and glorious reformation ; and the circumstances of his being accustomed to solitary retirement would naturally cause this persuasion to take a deeper root in his mind. In this manner, it is supposed, his career might have commenced; but finding himself to have succeeded beyond his expectations, and the corce of temptation growing with the increase of his popularity ánd power, his self-love at last overpowered his honesty, ambition took the place of devotior:, his designs expanded with his success, and he who had entered upon a pious enterprise as a wellmeaning reformer degenerated in the end into a wilful impostor, a gross debauchec, and an unprincipled despot.
On the other hand, it is maintained, and we think with mere of an air of probability, that his conduct from the very first bears the marks of a deep-laid nud systematic design ; that although he might not have anticipated all the results which crowned the undertaking, yet in every step of his progress he acted with a sheewdness and circumspection very litthe savouring of the dreams of enthusiasm; that the pretended visits of an angel, and his publishing, from time to time, the chapters of the Koran, as a divine revelation, are wholly inconsistent with the idea of his being merely a deluded fanatic; and that, at any rate, the discovery of his inability to work a miracle, the grand voucher of a divine messenger, must have been sufficient to dispel the fond illusion from his mind. Many circumstances, morcover, it is said, may be adduced, which night have concurred to prompt and favour the design of this arch imsosture. 1. Mohammed's genius was bold and aspiring. His family fad formerly held the ascendency in rank and power in the city of Mecfa, and it was merely his misfortune in having lost his father in infancy, and being left an orphan, that prevented him from succeeding to the same distinction. It was therefore the dictate of a very obvious principle of human nature, that he should contrive, if possible, to make the bortune and influence acquired by his marriage a step to still higher honours, and to raise himself to the ancient dignity of his house. 2. He pad travelled much in his own and forcign countrics. His journeys rould of course bring him acquainted with the tenets of the differcnt fects of the religious world, particularly the Jewish and the Christian, which were then predominant, and the latter greatly corrupted and torn opieces with internal dissensions. Being a sagacious observer of men, re could not fail to perceive that the distracted state of the existing religions had put the Eastern world into posture extremely favourable to the propagation of a new system. His own countrymen, the people of Araiia, were, indeed, for the most part sunk in idolatry, but the vestiges of purer faith, derived from patriarchal times, were still lingering among hem, to a degree that afforded him the hope of recovering them to a founder creed. 3. The political state of things at that time was such as signally to favour his project. The Roman empire, on the one hand,
and the Persian momarehy on the other, had hoth becono exceedugy enfeebled in the process of a long decline, towardes tha last stages if which they were now rapidly approaching. The Arabs, on the contrary, were a strong and tlonrishing people, abounding in numbers, and inured to hardslips. 'I'heir lieing divided into independent trbes presented also advantuges for the spread of a new fath which would not have existed had they been consolidated into ono govermment. As Mohammod had considerable opportunities to acquaint himself with the peculiar situation of these empires; as he had carefinlly noted the genius and disposition of the people which composed them; and as he possessed a capacity to render every circumstunco subservient to his purpose, it is contended, that his scheme was much more legimately the truit of policy than of piety, and that the psendo-prophet, instead of being pitied for his delusion, is rather to be reprobated for his baso fibrication.

After all, it is not improbable that Infinite Wisdom has so ordered if, that a veil of unpenctrated darkness should rest on the motires of the in:postor, in order that a special providence may be recognised in the rise and establishment of this arch-delusion in the world. In the absence of sufficient human causes to account for the phenomena; we are more readily induced to acknowledge a divine interposition. In the produs. tion of events which are overruled in the govermant of (iod to operite as penal evils for the punishment of the guilty, reuson and revelation hoth tench us reverently to acknowledge the visitation of the Divine Hand, whoever or whatever may liave been the subordinate agents, or their motives. "Is there evil in the city, suith the Lord, and I have not dono it?" i. e. the evil of suffering, not of sin. It cannot be doubted that, as a matter of fact, tho rise und reign of Mohummedimsm has resulted in the infliction of a most terrible scourge upon the apostate churches in the East, and in other portions of Christendom; anch, unless we exclude the Juige of the world from the excreise of his judicial prerogatives in dealing with his creatures, we cannot err, providod we do not infringe upon man's moral agency, ia reterring the organ of chastisement to the will of the Most High. The life and actions of Mohammed himself, and his first broaching the religion of the Korm, are but the incipient links in a chain of political revolutions, equal in magnitude and importance to any which appear on the page of history-revolutions from which it would be downright impiety to remove all idea of providential ordaimment. If then we acknowledge a peculiar providence in the astonishing success of the Saracen arms subsequent to the death of Mohammed, we must acknowledge it also in the origination of that system of religion which brought them under one head, and inspired then to the achievement of such a rapid and splendid series of conguests.
:The pretended prophet, baving at length, after years of deliberation, ripened all his plans, proceeded in the most gradual and cautions manner to put them in exccution. He had been, it scems, for some time in tho habit of retiring daily to a certain cave in the vicinity of Mecca, called the rave of Hera, for the ostensible purpose of spending his time

Hise cicecediuggy lic last stuges it $s$ ，on the colitra． in numbers，and cudent trbes pre－ whicels would not governiment．As int limself will uretially soted tho them；and us lue subservient to dis ore legimately the let，instead of be． for his base fibluri．
hns so ordered it， motives of the int－ ognised in the rise d．In the absence dens；we are more 7．In tho produc． lof liod to operite ind revelution ord of the Divine ord inte ayents，or ean，and llave not anot be donblet namedianisin lias re－ upon the upostate stendonn；and，un－ cise of his judicial ot ert，wovided we f the organ of chas－ uctions ot Molam－ the Korian，are but cqual in magnitude story－revolutions c all iden of provi－ hliar providence in cont to the denth of ination of that sys－ and inspired then $s$ of conguests． ars of deliberation． and eatutions man－ For some time in icinity of Mecca， spending lis time

In bastiug，prayer，and holy meditation．The impotant erisis having now arrived，he began to break to his wife，oa his return home in the evening，the solemn intelligeneo of supermatmol visions and voices with which ho whs favoured in lis retirement．©asiijah，as might be expee－ ted，was at first incredulons：She treated his visions as the dreans of a disturbed imagination，or ats the delnsions of the devil．＊Mohammed， however，persisted in assuring her of the reality of these communica－ sions，and rising still higher in his denands upon her credulity，at length repeated a passage which he aflirmed to he a part of a divine revelatint，recently conseyed to him by the ministry of the angel Gia－ briel．＇The memorable night on which thes visit was made by the hear－ enly messenger is called the＂night of Al Kadr，＂or the night of tho divine decrec，and is grer．tly celebrated，is it was the sume night on winch the entirc Konas descended from the seventh to the lowest heav－ en，to be thence revealed hy Giabriel in suceessive portions as occasion might reynire．＇I＇le Koran has a whole chapter devoted to the oom－ memoration of this event，entitled Al Kadr．It is as follows：＂In the bame of the most merciful God．Verily，wo sent down the Koran in the night of 11 Kadr．And what shall make thee understand how ex－ cellent the night of Al Kadr is？＇This night is better than a thousand months．Thicrein do the angels deseend，and the spirit Gabriel also， by the permission of their Lord，with his decrees concerning every mat－ ter．It is peace until the rising of the morn．＂On this favoured night， between tho \％3d and 9 Ith of Ramadan，according to the prophet，the angel appeared to him，fll glorious form，to communicate the happy ti－ dings of his mission．＇S＇he light issuing from his body，if＇the apostle－ elect may be believed，was ton dazzling for mortal eyes to behold；ho finted nader the splendour；nor was it till Gabrie！had assumed a hir－ man form，that he could venture to approach or look upon him．The angel then cried aloud，＂O Monamined，thon art the apostie of God，and I an tue anger．Gabrifl！＂＂Read！＂continued the an－ gel；the prophet declared that he was mable to read．＂Read ！＂＂Ga－ briel again exclaimed，＂read，in the name of thy Lord，who hath crea－ ted all things；who hath created man of consealed hlood．Read，by thy most beneficent Loord，who hath tauglit the use of the pen；who teacheth man that which he knoweth not．＂The prophet，who profess－ ed litherto to have been illiterate，then read the joyful tidings respect－ ing his ministry on earth，when the angel，having accomplisied his ms－ sion，majestically ascended to heaven，and disappeared from his view． When the story of this surprising interview with a cclestial visitant was related to Cadijah in connexion with the passage repeated，her unbe－ lief，as tradition avers，was wholly overcome，and not only so，but she was wrought by it into a kind of ecstacy，declaring，＂By Him in whoso ands her soul wats，that she trusted her husband would indeed one day lecome the prophot of his nation．＂In the height of her joy she imme－
＊This is the acconnt given by Prideaux．Sale，however，says，＂I do not ramem－ per to have read in any Eastern author，that Cadijah ever rejected ber husband＇s pre－ ences as delusions，or suspected him of any imposture．＂－Prelim．Disc．p，58．note．
diately imparted what she had heard to one Waraka, her cousin, who is supposed by some to have been in the secret, and who, being a Chisstian, had learned to write in the Hehrew character, and was tolorably well versed in the Jewish and Christian Scriptures. He unhegitatingly assented to her opinion respecting the divine designation of her hus. hand, and ceen atlirmed, that Mohammed was un other than the great prophet foretold by Moses, the son of Amram. 'l'hie belief that both tho prophet and his spurious religion were subjects of inspired prediction in the Old Testament Soriptures, is studiously inculented in the lio. ran. "Thy Lord is the mighty, the merciful. Ihis book is certain!y a revolation from the Iord of all creatures, which the faithfill apirit (Gabriel) hath caused to descend upon thy henrt, that thon mightest be n preacher to thy people in the prerspicuous Arabic tongue; nud it is borne witness to in the Scriptures of formet ages. Wus it not a sign unto them that the wise men among the chilifren of laracl knew it ?"

Having succeeded in gaining over his wife, he persevered in that retired and austere kind of fife which tends to beget the roputation of preeminent sanctity, and ere long had his ecrvant, Zeid Ebn Hareth, added to the list of proselytes. He rewarded the faith of Zeid by manumitting him from scrvitude, nnd it has hence become a standing rale among hie followers always to grant their freedom to such of their slaves us embrace the religion of the prophet. Ali, the son of Abu T'aleb, Mo. hammed's cousin, was his next convert, but the impetuous youth, disregarding the other two as persous of comparatively little note, used to style himself the first of belicvers. His fourth and most important convert was Abubeker, a powerful citizen of Mecca, by whose influence a number of persons possessed of rank and authority were induced to profess the religion of Islam. 'These were Othman, Zobair, Saad, Abdorralıman, and Abu Obeidah, who afterward became the principal leaders in his armies, and his main instruments in the establishment both of his imposture and of his empire. Four years were spent in the arduous task of winning over these nine individuals to the faith, some of whom were the principal men of the city, and who composed the whole party of his proselytes previously to his beginning to proclaim his mission in public. He was now forty-four years of age.

It has been remarked, as somewhat of a striking coincidence, that the period of Mohammed's retiring to the cave of Hera for the purpose of fabricating his imposture corresponds very nearly with the time in which Boniface, bishop of Reme, by virtue of a grant from the tyrant Phocas, first assumed the title of Universal Pastor, and began to lay claim to that spiritual supremacy over the church of Christ, which has ever since heen arrogated to themselves by his successors.
"And from this time," bays Pridenux, "both he (the Bishop of Rome) and Mohammed having conspired to found themselves an empire in imposture, their followers have been ever since endenvouring by the same methods, that is, those of fire and sword, to propagate it among mankind; so that Antichrist seems at this time to have set both his feet upon Christendom together; the one in the East, the other in the West, and how much each hath trampled upon the church of

Chist, all sucecoding ages have nhundantily experiencel." The nrrungemput of dates liere ndverted to miny be worth noticins; bothevente having occurred withln the first six of eight years of the seventh century; but we huve as yet met with nu evidence foconvince us of the propicety of npplying the epithet Antichrist to Mohnmmed. It is, however, the opinion of many Protestunt expositors of prophery, that this nippellation is properly nttributable to that systen of eccleainstical dominution solong exercised by the limnisis hierurchy, and the continumee of which, it is mintuined, is limited by the prophetic term of $1 \mathbf{1} 60$ yenrs. If; therefore, this predieted period, assigned to the reign o' the lhom:an Antichrist, be dated from near the commencement of the seventh century, we are not very fin from the ern of great moral changes in the sinte of the world; and there are reasons to be ndilaced in a subsequent part of this work, which lead us to believe, that the curcer of Molinnumednuism rins paralicl to thut of Popery, and that, taking their rise fiom neariv a cominon erin, they are destined also to synocrise in their thall.

## CHAPTER IV.

The Prophet announces his .LEission among his kindred of the KoreishMeets with a harsh repulse-Begins to dechare it in public-Vicw of his fundamental doctrincs-His pretensions respecting the Koran.- The disdainful Rrjection of his Message by his fellow-citisens--His consequent Denunciations agrainst them.

The mission of Mohammod had hitherto been conducted in private. 'Ihe proselytes he had thas fire gained had been won over from among the circle or inis immediate friends and connexions. 'The time had now come, he affirmed, when the Lord communded bin to inulse his message pablicly known, beginning with his kindsed of the tribe of Koreish, "O thou covered, arise and preach, and magnify thy Lord." "And almonish thy more near relutions." 'To this end he directed Ali to prejare a generous entertainment, and invite to it the sons and descendants of Abdol Alotnlleb, where, when they were all convened, he would formally divalge to thetn the solemn fact of the apostolic commission. Some disturbance, occusioned by Abu Taleb, caused the conpany to break up before he had un opportunity of effecting his purpose, which induced him to give them a second invitation on the ensuing day. About forty of them accordingly assembled around his board, when the prophet nrose, and thus addressed his wondering guests ; " I know no man in the whole peninsula of the Ar. abs who can propose any thing nore excellent to his relations than what I now do to you; I offer you happiness both in this life and in that which is to come; God Almighty hath commanded me to call you minto him ; who therefore among you will be my vizier (assistant), and will becoinc my brother and vicegerent ?" General astonishment kept
the assenthly silent ; none offered to accept the profered ofice till the tiery Ali bitrst forth und delared that he would be the brother and ussistment of the prophet, " 1 ," saill he, "O prophet of God, will be thy vizier; I myself will beat out the teeth, pull out the eyes, rip open the bellics, and cut on the legs, of all those who shall dare to oppose thee." 'The prophet caught the young proselyte in his arms, exclaining, "'I'his is my brother, my deputy, my successor; show yourselves obedient unto him." At this apparently extravagant command, the whole company burst into langhter, telling Abu Taleb that he must now pry obedience and subuission to his own son! As words were :aultiplied. surprise began to give way to indignation, the serions pretensions of the prophet were seriously resented, and in the issue the assembly broise up in confusion, uffording the ardent apostle liut slender prospects of euccess among his kinsmen.

Undeterred by the finilure of his tirst public: attempt, Mohammed began to preach still more openly before the people of Mecea. He mu. nounced to them that lie was commissioned by the Almighty to be his prophet on the earth; to assert the unity of the Divine Being; to denounce the worship of innges; to recall the people to the true and only religion; to bear the tidings of paradise to the belicving; and to threaten the deaf and unbelieving with the terrible vengennce of the Lord. His main doctrine, and that which constitutes th.e distinguishing claracter of the Koran is, that there is but one God; that he only is to be worstripped; nad that all idolatry is a foul abomination, to be utterly abolished. The 112th ch. of the Koran, entitled "The Deelaration of God's Unity," is held in the most profund veneration by the Mohammedans, and declared, by a tradition of the prophet, to beegual in value to a third part of the whole Koran. It is said to have been ravealed in answer to the Koreish, who inquired of the apostle concerning the distinguishing attributes of the God whom he invited them to worship. It consists of a iingle sentence.
"In the name of the most merciful God. Say, God is one God; the eternal God; he begetteth not, neither is he begotten: and there is not any one like unto him.". In the incessant repetition of this doctrinc in the pages of the Koran, the author is aiming not only at the grosser errors of polytheism and idolatry, then common among the Eastern nations, but is levelling a blow also at the fundamental tenet of Christianity, that Jesus Christ is the son of God, "the only begotten of the Father." Like others in other ages, Mohammed could conceive of no mode of understanding the doctrine of the filiation of Christ, as held by Christians, which did not directly militate with the truth of the essential unity of the Most High; and in his view the first born of absurdities was, to affirm in the same breath that Christ was the son of God, and yet coequal und coeternal with the Father. The New Testament declarations, therefore, respecting the person and character of the Messiah find no mercy, at the hands of the author of the Koran, who either had not the candour or the capacity to discriminate between the doctrine of the Trinity and that of Tritheism. " 0 yo who have received the Ecriptures, exceed not the just bounds in your religion, neither say of (iod any other than the truth."-i. e. either by rejecting Jesus as the Jews do, or by raising. him to an equality with
ered oflice till the e brother and as. Cod, will be thy eyes, rip open the "e to oppose thec." exclaiming, "'Ihis purselves obedient id, the whole comnust now phy obewere :multiplied. ills pretensions of sue the assembly but slender pros.
t, Mohammed bePlecea. He'm. Almighty to be his ine Being; to dee to the true anil belicving; and to vengeance of the as the distinguishiod; that he only abomination, to be ied "The Declareneration by the prophet, to be e$t$ is said to have red of the apostle whom he invited
ad is one God ; the 1 : and there is not of this doctrine in at the grosser erg the Eastern natenet of Christian. gotten of the Fatloould conceive of filiation of Christ, militate with the and in his view breath that Christ al with the Father. ecting the person ands of the author capacity to discrif 'Iritheism. "0 ust bounds in your a."-i. e. either by o an equality with

Liod as du the Christians. a Verily, Chuist ofiou the apostle of God, and his word, which he Josus, the son or Mary, is spirit proceeded from him. Believe, there conveyed into Mary, and a for you. God is bute are three Gods; for bear in God and his aposa son! Unto him but one God. Far be it from him th it will be better he is suffieient unto himeth whatsoever is in heaven that he should have Verily, God is Christ the son of "They are certainly infidearth; and ion unto God, God shall son of Mary. Whoever shall givels who say, shall be hell-fire. They are certainly from paradise, and his a compan. of three: for there is no God certainly infidels who say God is the tation is no more than an apostlod besides one God. Ohrist thed is the third they both ate food." "Tre ; and his mother was a women of vernary, whom they associate with here is no Gud bat he: the curse of varacity:
With this fundamental him in his worship." he curso be on thaso nected that of his being, sinco Moses and Jem creed, Mohamned conof God. "We gave unto the children of Jesus, the only true prophet and wisdom, and prophecy; and we fed them with the book of the law ferred them above all nations: and wo gavo with good thíngs, and precerning the business of religion. Afterward them plain ordinaaces con hammed, to promulgate a law conceringard we appointed thee, O Mo. fore follow the same, and follownering the business of religion: where ant!" The object of his mission, he the desire of those who are ignore fliver to the world an entirely now, sehemened, was not so much to dereplant the only true and ancient faith pe of religion, as to restore and prophets, from Adrm down to Christ. professed by the patriarchs and hee an Arabic Koran, that thou mayest "Thus have ve revealed unto ind the Arabs who dwoll round about it. Warn the metropolis of Mecca, gion which he commanded Noah, and whith ordained you the rend Jesus; Mohammed, and which we commanded we have revealed unto Theres; saying, observo this religion, and bed Abraham, and Moses, herefore, invite them to receive the sure faith, not divided therein.hent of the a hast been commanded." This revival and urgent with ftie corruptions of faith, he taught, was to be effected re-establiehct the books of of the Jews and Christians. For while by purging it y inspiration, he at old and New Testaments were originallmits tha shamefully corrupted same time maintains, that they bave been written opies of both errupted by their respective disciples, that been siace notes them in the uterly unworthy of credit; and the that the present Nowing extracte thoran according to the received toxt, he soldom the primitive faith the reader will porceive how unsparint. From the adulterated and deals forth his rebukes upon those who the restorer res, why do ye clothered it. "O ye who have received had wilfuld there are certainly truth vanity, and knowingly hide the Ecripthat ye may think what they them who read the Scriptures perverse. ey say, this is from God; but read to be really in the Scripture; and ich is false concerning God, against their knowledge." speak that 4
fore because they have brokeu their covenant, wo* have cursed them and hardened their hearts; they dislocate the words of the Pentateuch from their places, and have forgotten part of what they were admonished; and wilt thou not cease to discover the deceitful practices among them, except a few of them." "O ye who have received the Scriptures, now is our apostle come unto you, to make manitest unto you many things which ye have conccaled in the Scriptures."

In the exocution of his high behest, he, declared himself appointed to promulge a now revelation in successive portions, the aggregate of which was to constitute the Bible ot his followers. The original or archetype of the Koran, he taught, was laid up from everlasting in the archives of Heaven, being written on what he termed the preserved table, near to the throne of God, from which the series of chapters communicated by Gabricl were a transcript. 'This pretended gradual modo of revelation was certainly a master stroke of policy in the impostor. "The unbe'jevers say, unless the Koran bo sent down to him entire at once, we will not believe. But in this manner have we revealed it that we might confirm thy heart thereby, and we have dictated it gradually by distinct parcels." Had the whole volume been published at once, so that a rigid examination could have been instituted into its contents as a whole, and the different parts brought into comparison with each other, glaring inconsistencies would have been casily detected, and ob. jections urged which he would probably have found it impossible to answer. But by pretending to receive his oracles in separate portions, at different timee, according as his own exigences or those of his follorers required, he had a ready way of silencing all cavils, and cxtricating himself with credit from every difficulty, as nothing forbade the mes. sage or mandate of to-day heing modified or abrogated that of to-mor. row. In this munner, twentr-thres years elapsed hefore the whole chain of revelations was completed, though the prophct informed lis disciples that he had the conselation of secing the entirc Koran, bound in silk and adorned with gold and gems of Paradise, once a year, till, in the last year of his life, he was favoured with the vision twice. d part of these spurious oracles were published at Mecca before his flight, the remainder at Medina after it. The particular mode of publication is said to have been this: When a new chapter had been communicated to the prophet, and was about to be promulgated for the benefit of the worli, he first dictated it to his secretary, and then delivered the written paper to his followers, to be read and repeated till it had become firmly imprinted upon their memories, when the paper was again returned to the prophet, who carefully deposited it in a chest, called by him "the ches of his apostleship." The hint of this sacred coffer was doubtless taker from the Ark of the Covenant, the holy chest of the Jewish tabernacle in which the authentic copy of the law was laid up and preservecThis chest Mohammed left at his death in the care of one of his wives

[^4]and from its contents the volume of the Koran was afterwards compiled. The first collection and arrangement of these prophetic relics, more precious than the scattered leaves of all the Sybils, was made by Abuboker, but the whole was afterwards revised and new modelled by Othman, who left the entire volumne of the Koran in the order in which wo now have it.

Mohammed's first reception by the mass of his fellow-citizens of Hecca was scarcely more hopeful thinl it had been among his kindred. His alleged divine messages, especially when they assumed a tone of reprehension and reproach towaids his countrymen, for their idolatry, abstinacy, and perverseness, were met with indignant scoffs and railings. Some called him a magician and a sorccrer; others, a silly retailer of old fables; and others directly charged him with being a liar and an impostor. .The reader will be amused and interested by the insertion of a few out of the scores of allusions, with which the Koran abounds, to the profane and contemptuous treatment shown towards the prophet at this time. "The Meccans say, $O$ thou, to whom"the admonition (the Koran) hath been sent down, thou art certainly possessed with a devil : wouldst not thou have come unto us with an attendance of angels if thou hadst spoken the truth? Answer, We send not down the angels but on a just occasien." "Verily I have permitted these Meccans and their fathers to live in prosperity, till the truth should come unto them, and a manifest apostle : but now the truth is come unto them, they say, this is a piene of sorcery; and we believe not therein. And they say, Had this Koran been sent down unto some great man in either of the two cities, we would have reccived it." "The time of giving up their account draweth nigh unto the people of Mecca. No admonition cometh unto them from their Lord, but when they hear it they turn it to sport. They say, the Koran is a confused heap of dreams: nay, he hath forged it." "And the unbelicvers say, this Koran is no other than a forgery which he hath contrived; and other people have assisted him thereip : but they utter an unjust thing and a falschood. They also say, These are fables of the ancients, which he hath caused to be writter down; and they are dictated unto him morning and evening. Say, He hath revealed it who knoweth the secrets in heaven and earth. And they say, What kind of apostle is this? He cateth food, and walketh in the streets as we do. The ungodly also say, Ye follow no other than a man who is distracted." "When our evident signs are rehearsed unto them, the unbelievers say of the truth, This is a manifest piece of sorcery. Will they say, Mohammed hath forged it? Answer, If I have forged it, verily, ye will not obtain for me any favour from God: he well knoweth the injurious language which ye utter concerning it.I follow no other than what is revealed unto mo; neither am I any moro than a public warner."
in. But these stiff-necked idolaters were plainly taught that they were not to promise themselves impunity in thus pouring contempt npon the testimony of an authorized legate of heaven. The Most High himself was brought in confirming by an oath the truth of his prophet's mission. "I
surear by that which ye see and that which ye see not, that this is the discourse of an honourable apostle, and not the discourse of a poet: how little do ye believe! Neither is it the discourse of a soothsayer: how little are ye admonis!ed! It is a revelation from the Lord of all creatures. If Mohammed had forged any part of these discourses concerning us, verily we had taken him by the right hand, and had cut in sunder the vein of his heart, neither would we have withheld any of you from chastising him. And verily, this book is an admonition unto the pious; and we well know there are some of you who charge the same with imposture: but it shall surely be an occasion of grievous sighing ante the infldels; for it is the truth of a certainty." "Because he is an adversary to our signs, I will afflict him with grievons calam:ties; for he bath devised contumelious expressions to ridicule the Koran. May be be cursed! I will cast hiin to be barned in hell. And what shall make thee understand what hell is 7 It leaveth not any thing unconsumed, neither doth it suffer any thing to escape; it searcheth mens' flesh; over the same are nineteen angels appointed. We have appoint. ed none Dut angels to preside over hell-fire." "Verily wo have prepared for the unbeliovers chains, and collars, and burning fire." "Verily those who disbelieve our signs wo will surely cast out to bo broiled in fiell-fire : and when their skins snall be well burned, we will give them pher skins in exchange, that they may taste the sharper forment."

## CHAPEER V.

Mohammed not discouraged by Opposition-The Aurden of his Prea hing-D. scription of Paradise - Errar to stuppose Wonsen excluded- If Hell-Gains some Faltowers-Challenged to work a .Miracle-His Reply-'I'he Koran the grand Miracle of his Religion-dudicial Obduracy chargcel upon the Lin. bolicvers.

Bur no repulses, however rude or rebellious, operated to deter the prophet from presecuting his apostolic ministry. No injuries or insults, however gailing, availed to quench that glow of philanthropy, that earnest solicifude for the salvation of his countrymen, for which his di vire revelations plainly give him credit. "Peradventure, thon nfflictest thyself unto death lest the Meccans become not true believers." "Verily, God will cause to err whom lie pleaseth, and will direct whom hic pleaseth. Let not thy soul, therefore be spent in sighs for their sikes, on account fot their obstinacy; for God well knoweth that which they do." And it must be anknowlodged, that his firmness at this stage of his career, in the midst of bitter opposition, opprobrious taunts, and reIentless ridicule, has very much the air of having been prompted by, n sincere though enfhusiastic belief in the anth and rectitude of his canse.
that this is the rse of a poet: ia soothsayer: the Lord of all discourses conand had cut in withheld any of admonition unto who charge the sinn of grievons (y." "Bceauso grievous calam:dieule the Koran. hell. And what not any thing un: eearcheth mens' We have appointwe have prepar. g fire." "V rerily to bo broiled in we will give them per inement."
his prea hing-D. d- Of Hill- Gains Reply ${ }^{2}$ The Korm tharged upon the $\mathrm{C}^{2}$ -
erated to deter the No injuries or inphilenthropy, that , for which his dibelievers" tll direct wherhas for their he the that which they, ss at this stage oi ous taunts ang on een proms, and retitude arpted by, n titude of his canse.

The scope of several chapters of the Koran promulgated at this time learls to the same impression. They are strikingly hortatory and impassioned in their character, inculeating the being and perfections of the one only God, the vanity of idols, a fiture resurrection, a day of judgment, a state of rewards and punishments, and the necessity of works of righteousness. The marks of imposture are much more discernible upon the jages subsequently revealed, in which the prophet had private ends of a sinister nature to accomplish. But he contented not himself with meroly preaching in public assemblies, and proclaiming in streets and market-places the solemn and awakening burden of his megsage. With a zeal worthy of a better canse, and with a perseverance and pationce that might serve as a model to a Christian missionary, he backed his public appeals by private addresees, and put in requisition all the arts of persuasion and proselytism, in which he was so emineatly skilled. He applied himadf in the most insinuating manner to all classes of people; he was complaisant and liberal to the poor, cultivating their acquaintance and relieving; their fwants; the rich and noble he soothed by flattery; and bore afironts without seeking to avengo them. 'Ihe effect of this politic management was greatly enhancad by the peculiar character of those inspired promises and threatenings which he brought to enforce his message.
His promises were chiefly of a blissful paradise in another life; and these he studiously aimed to set forth in colvurs best calculated to work upon the fancies of a sensitive and sensual race, whose minds, in consequence of their national habits, were little susceptiblo of the images of abstract enjoyment. The notions of a purely intellectual or spiritual happiness pertain to a more cultivated poople. The scorching heat of those tropical regions, the aridnese of the soil, and the consequent lack of a vordant vegetation, made it natural to the Arabs, and other oriental nations, to conceive of the most exquisite scenes of pleasure under the images of rivers of water, cooling drinks, flowery gardens, shaded bowers, and luscious fruits. The maguificence also of msny of the Eastern buildings, their temples and palaces, with the sumptuousness of their dresses, the pomp of processions, and the splendour of rourts, would all tend to mingle in their ideas of the highest state of enjoyment an abundance of gold and silver and precious stones-treasures for which the Enst has been famed from time immemorial. Mohammed was well aware that a plentitude of these visible and palpable attractions, to say nothung of grosser sources of pleasure, was an indispensble requisite in a heaven suited to the temperament of his countrymen. According!y, he sssures the faithful, that they shall enter into delectable gardeus, where the rivers flow, some with water, some with wine, some with milk, and some with clarified honey; that there will be fountains and purling strcams whose nebbles are rubies and emeralds, their earth of camphire, their beds of musk, and their sides of saffron. In feasting upon the banquets of paradise, at oue time the most delicions fruito shall hang dependent from the branches of the trees under which their conches are spread, so that they have only to reach
torth their hands to pluck them; agrain, they shall be served in distes of gold filled with every varioty of grateful focd, and supplied with wine of ambrosial flayour. But the prophei's own glowing pietures of the joys of his promised paradise wili to mure justree to the subject. "They shall repose on couches, the liaing whereof shall be of thick silk interwoven with gold; und the fruit of the two gardens shall be near athand to gather. Therein shall receive them treauteous damsals, retraining their eyes from beholding any i, sides their spouses, having complexions like rubies and pearls. Bes:dow these there shall bativo other gardens that shall be dressed in eternai vardure. In each of them shall bo two fountains pouring forth plenty of water. In each of them shall be fruits, and palm-trees, and pomegranates. Therein shalt be agreeable and beautenus damsely, having fine black eyes, and kopt in pavilions from public view, whom no man shall have dishonoured before their predestined spouses, nor any genius." "They shall dwell in gardens of delight, reposing on couches adorned with gold and precious stones; sitting opposite to one another thercon. Youths, which shall continue in their bloom for ever, shall go round about to attend them, with gob. lets and beakers, and a cup of flowiag wine: their heads sliall not ache by drinking the same, neither shall tipeir reason be disturbed." "Up. on them shall be garments of tine green silk, and of brocades, "and they shall be adorned with bracelcts of silver, and their Lord shall give them to drink of a most pure liquor-a cup of wine mixed with the water ol Zenjebit, a fountain in paradise named Snlsabil." "But those who be. lieve and do that which is right, we will bring into gardens watered by rivers, therein shall they romain for ever, and therein shall they enjoy wives free from all infirmitice; and we will lead them into perpetual i. bodes." "For those who fear their Lord will be prepared high apartments in paradise, over which shall be other apartments built; and risers shall run beneath them." "But fur the pious is prepared a place of bliss; gardens planted with trees, and vineyards, and damsels of equal age with themselves, and a full cup."

Such is the Mohammedan parndise, rendered alluring by its gross, carnal, and luxurious character. It cannot indeed be denied that there are occasional intimations, in the Koran, of some kind of spiritual happiness to be enjoycd by the pious in addition to their corporeal pleasures. "Their prayer therein shall be, SPraise be unto thee, $\mathbf{O}$ God. and their salutation thercin shall be, Peace! and the end of their prayes shall be, Praise be unto God, the La: 'l of all croatures." But it is beyond question, that the main ingredients in the anticipated happinesso the Moslem saints are of a sensual kind, addressed to the inferior prim ciples of our nature, and making:their paracise to differ but little from the elysium of the heathen peets.

The reader of the Koran will meet with repeated declarations sub versive of the vulgar opinion, that the religion of Mohammed denies 1 women the possession of souls, and excludes them from all participatio in the joys of paradise. Whatever may have been imagined or affirme on this point by some of his more "igrecint iollowers, it is certain th
rved in distles of lied with wine of tures of the joys subject. "They f thick silk interIl be near at hand msals, retraining having complesbative other garof them shall be of them shall be hall be agreeable kopt in pavilions roured before their 11 dwell in gardens al precious stones; hich slall continue sud them, with gob. eads sliall not ache disturbed." "Up. brocades,' and they .ord shall give them ed with the water o: "But those who be gardens watered by ein shall they enjoy eem into perpotual 3 . prepared high apart. ments built; and rix. and damsels of cqual
alluring by its gross, 1 be denied that tiere kind of spiritual lap. their corporeal plea e unto thee, $O$ diod urces." 13 licipated hat it is be d to the inferines differ but little prod
ted declarations suiw Mohammed denies from all participatio imagined or aftirma yers, it is certain the

Mohammed himself thought too highly of women to inculcate any such doctrine, as the following passages will evince: "Whoso doeth evil, shall be rewarded for it; and shall uot find any parron or helper besides God; but whoso doeth good works, whother he bo male or female, and is a true believer, they shall be admitted into paradise, and shall not in the leust be unjustly dealt with." "ग'he reward of these'shall be pa:adise, gardens of eternal abodo, which they shall enter, and whatever shall have acted uprightly, of their fathers, and their wives, and thoir posterity; and angels shall go in unto them by every gate, saying, Peace bc upon you, because ye have endured with patience; how excellent a reward is paradise!"
If these vivid representations of the future bliss of the faithful were calculated to work strongly upon the passions of his denunciations of the fearful torments reserved for mbelievers, were equally well fitted to produce the same effect. The most revolting images of borily suffering, hunger, thirst, the torture of fire, and the anguislı of piercing cold, were summoned up by the preaclier to alarm the workers of evil, and to call off the worshippers of idols from their impiety. But for the transgressors is prepared an evil receptacle, natmely hell: they shall be cast into the same to be burned, and a wretehed couch shall it be." "And they who believe not shall have garments of fire fitted unto them: boiling water shall be poured on their heads; their bowels shall be dissolved thereby, and also their skins; and they shall be beaten with maces of iron. So often as they shall endeavour to get out of hell, because of the anguish of their torments, they shall be ciragged back into the same ; and their tormentors shall say unto them, Tuste ye the pein of burning.""It shall be said unto them, (io yeinto the punishment which ye denied asa falsehood: go ye into the shajow of tac smoke of hell, which shal! ascend in threo columns, and shall not shade you from the heat, neither: shall it be of service against the flame; but ut shall cast forth sparks as big as towers, resembling yellow cauelis in eolour." "Hath the news of the overwhelming day of judgment reached thee? The countenances of some, on that day, shall he cast down; labouring and toiling; they shall be cast into a scorching fire to be broiled: they shall be given to drink of a boiling fountain: they shall have no food but of dry thorns and thistles; which shall not fatten neither shall they satisfy hun ger." Is this a better entertaimment, or the tree of Al Zaccum? How different is the tree. Al Zaccum from the abode of Eden! We have planted it for the torment of the wicked. It is a tree which issueth from the bottom of hell : the fruit thereof resembleth the heads of devils; and the damned shall eat of the same, and shall fill their bellies therewith; and then shall be given them thereon a mixture of filthy and boiling water to drink: afterward shall they returu into hell."
Such was the burden of his exiortations. while he warned the people of the danger of unbeliel; and urzed them by his oloquence to avoid eternal dammation by putting faith in the apostle of God. In addition to these powerful motives, drawn from another world, he was lavish in the menaces of fearful punishments in this life also, if
they hurkened not to his voice. For this purpose, lie set betore them the calamities which had overialion bobe who, in former times, had refused to llsten to the propheta ge:it among then. "Do they aut consider how uany generntions wa huc dostricyed before then? Other apostles have laughod to scorn bisiore theo, bat the judgments which they made jest of encompssereit tiose wite horghed them to scorn. Sey. Go through the enrth, ran! bsinud what has been the end ol those who accused our prophets of imponitre:" "We have aliendy spnt mesenges unto suadry nations before thee.nad we afflicted them with trouble and adversity, that they might humble theinselves; but their hearts becane hardened, an, Si Satan calvere thers to find charma in rebellion.And when they had forgoters tiat sosuewiug which they hind been admonished, we suddeuly laid hold on thicm, and behold they wero seized with dispair ; and she utmost part of the people which had acted wickedly was cut off; praise be unto Giod, the Loord of all crentares!" He cited the case of the inhabitunts of the old world, wio perished in the deluge for not giving heed to the preaching of Nouh: ofSodom, overwhelned by fire for not receiving the admonition of Lot; and ot the Egyptians, who were buried in the Red Sen for despising Moses. To give stili greater effect to his warnings, and ingratiate himself into the favour, as well as to awaken the fears of his auditors, he took repeated oecaspion to allege his entire disimerestedness in the work in which he was engnged. He preached becanse he was commanded to preach, and not because heintended covertly to make gain of his hearers. He therefore boldly takes them to witness that he demanded no compensation for his services. He looked to a higher source for reward. "But we have brought them their admonition.Dost thou ask of them any muintenancef for thy prenching? since the maintenance of thy Lord is better ; for he is the most bounteous provider." "We have seat thee to ke mos osher than a beurer of good $t \mathrm{i}$ dings, and a denouncer of thre It:s. Say, Insh not of you any reward for this my preaching, besides the westrision of him who shall desire to take the way unto his Jord!."

As the prophet thercfore disclaimed all sinister views in the execution of his office, as he expressly renourced the expectancy of any earthly advantage whatever, so he was commanded to divest his mind of all undue anxiety as to the result of his labonrs of love. " $\boldsymbol{O}$ apostle, let not them grieve thee who hasten to infidelity." "Whoso is wilfully blind, the consequence will be to himseif. We have not appointed thee a keeper over them : ncither art thou a guardian over them." "And be not thou grieved on account of the unbelievers,' neither be thou troubled for that which they subtlety devise."

It is not therefore to be wordered at that the rousing appeals"of the prophet should have taken effect; that one after another should have lis-tened-pondered-wavered-and yielded-especially as the gravity and sanctity of his deportment scem, at this time, to have corresponded with the solemn strain of his expostulations. Such accordingly was the fact. The number of bis followers grandually increased, so that in five years from the commencement of his mission, his party, including himself, amounted to forty,

That which operated more than any thing else to disconcert the im:
set betore them mer times, had oo they at conthein? Other giments which to acorn. stay. ad of those who dy srnt mesenem with trouble their hearts beis in rebellion.they hind been ehold they were which had actLard of all crenold worth, wioo aching of Noah: e adtimonition of ed Sen for despigs , and ingratiate rs of his auditors, restedness in the uluse lie was com. rtly to make gain itness that he deooked to a bigher eir admonition.aching? since the bounteous provibeurer of good tiof you any reward Who shall desire
vs in the execution cy of any earthly his mind of all un-- O apostle, let not 0 is wilfully blind, ointed thee a keep" "And be not $r$ be thou troubled
ing appeals"of the er should have lis. $y$ as the gravity have corresponded reased, so that in $s$ party, including disconcert the im:
postor was the demund repeatedly made upon him to prore the truth of his mission by working a miracle. "Moses and Jesus," said his hearers, "and the rest of the prophets, according to thine own doctrine, wrought mirucles to prove theinselves sent of God. Now if thou be a prophet, and greater than any that were hefore thee, as thou boastest let us see a niracle irom thee also. Do tholl make the dead to rise, the damib to speak, the deaf to hear; or olse cau. buntains to spring out of the carth, and make this place a garden adorned with vines and palm trees, and watered with rivers running through it in divers channels; or do thou make thee a house of gold beautified with jewels and costly furniture; or lot' us see the book w'ich thou allegest to have come down from heaven, or the angel which thou sayest brings it unto thee, and we will belicve." This natural and not uureasonable demand, he had, as wo learn from the Koran, several ways of evading. At one time, he tells them he is only a man sent to preach to them the rewards of paradise and the punishments of hell. "The infidels say, unless a sign be sent unto him from his Lord, we will not believe. Thou art commissioned to be a preacher only, and not a worker of mirades." "Answer, Signs are in the power of God alone; and I ann no more than a public preacher. Is it not sufficient for thein that we have sent down unto thee the book of the Koran, to be read unto them ?" "We sent not our messengers otherwise than bearing good tidings and denouncing threats. Say, I say not unto you, The treasures of God are in my power: neither do I say, I know the secrets of God: neither do I say unto you, Verily I ain an angel: I follow only that which is revoaled unto me." At another, that their predecessors lad despised the miracles of the former prophets, and for this reason God would work no more among them. Again, that those whom God had ordained to believo, should believe without miracles, while the non-elect, those to whom he had not decreed the gift of faith, should not believe though ever so many miracles were wrought before them. "And though we had sent down angels unto them, and the dead had spoken unto them, they would not have believed, unless God had so pleased." "If their arersion to thy admonitions be griovous unto thee, if thou canst seek a den whereby thou mayest penetrate into the inward parts of the earth, or a ladder by which thou mayest ascend into heaven, that thou mayest show them a sign, do so, but thy search will be fruitless; for if God pleased ho would bring them all to the true direction." At a later period, when he was at Medina at the head of an army, he had a more summary way of solving all difficulties arising from this source, for his doctrine then was, that God had formorly sent Moses and Jesus with the power of working miracles, and yet men would not believe, and therefiore he had now sent him, a pronhet of unother order, commissioned to enforce belief by the power of the sword. The sword accordingly was to be the true seal of his apostleship, and tho remark of the historian is equally just and striking, that "Mohammed, with the sword in one hand and the Koran in the other, erected his throne on the ruins of Christianity and of Rome."

Hy some of the more credulous of the prophet's followers, there are, it is true, several miracles attributed to hum; as that he clave the moon asunder; that trees wont forth to meet him; that water flowed from between his fingers; that the stones saluted lim; that a beam groaned at him ; that a camel complained to him; and that a shoulder of mation informed him of its being poisoned, together with several others. But these iniracles were never alleged by Mohammed himself, nor are they maintained by any respectable Moslem writers. The only miracle claimed cither by him or his intelligent votaries is the Koran, the composition of which is the grand iniracle of their religion. On this point the reader will perceive that the prophet's assumptions in the following passages are high-toned indeed. "If ye be in doubt concerning that revelation which we have sent down unto our servant, produce a chapter like unto it; and call upon your witnesses, besides God, if ye say the truth." "Say, Verily, if men and genii were purposely assembled, that they might produce a book like this Koran, they could not produce one like it, although the one of them assisted the other.". "Will they say, Ho hath forged the Koran? Hring therefore ten chapters likefunto it, forged by yourselves; and call on whomsocver ye may to assist you." The infatuation of the Meccans in rejecting this inestimable "admonition," stamped as it was with the evident impress of the divinity, he hesitates not to ascribe to the effect of a fearful judicial obstinacy, such as the Jewish prophets frequently tizaten against the perverse nation of Israel. "If we had revealed the Koran in a foreign language, they had surely said, Unless the signs thereuf be distinctly explained, we will not receive the same: Answer, It is unto those who believe at sure guide and a remedy; bnt unto those who believe not, it is a thickness of hearing in their ears, and'it is a darkness which covereth them." "As for the unbelievers, it will be equal unto them whether thou admonish them or do not ndmonish them; they will not believe. God hath sealed up their hearts and their hearing; a dimness covereth their sight, and they shall suffer a grievous yunishment." "There is of them who hearkeneth unto thee when thou readest the Koran; but we have cast veils over their hearts, that they should not understand it, and a deafness in their ears; and though they should see all kinds of signs, they will not believe therein; and their infidelity will arrive to that height, that they will even come unto thee to dispute with thee." Still his preaching prevailed. He bocame more and more popular; proselytes flocked around him; and, as Gibton remarks, "he had the satisfaction of beholding the increase of his infant congregation of Unitarians, who revered him as a prophet, and to whom he seasonably dispensed the spiritual nourishment of the Koran."
wers, there ure, clave the noon ater flowed from a beam groaned roulder of mattion ral others. But self, nor are they he only miracle Koran, the com-

On this point $s$ in the following concerning that produco a chap. God, if ye say the osely assembled, could not produce er." "Will they ${ }_{2}$ chapters like funye may to assist this inostimable press of the divinil judicial obstinagainst the perverse foreign language, stinctly explained, hose who believe a $\circ$ not, it is a thick. ch covereth them." lether thou admonelievo. God hath bvereth their sight, cre is of them who but we have cast and it, and a deafads of signs, they ive to that height, thee." Still his pular; proselytes ad the satisfaction f Unitarians, who ly dispensed the

## Chap'rer Vi.

7he Kortish exusperated and alarmed by Molammed's growing surcess- 'ommence persecution-- Some nf his followcrs set\% safcty in flight-Ni eose
 die--He makes a temporary Retreat jrom Mecetr-Returns and preaches with increascd zeal-s'ome of the lifgriuls from . Itedinu converted.

I're zeal of the prophet in proclaiming his doctrines, together with the visiblo increase of his followers, at length alarmed the fears of the head men of the tribe of Koreish; and had it not been for the powerful protection of his uncle, Mohannied would doubtless at this time have fallen a vietim to the malice of his oponents. The chief mon of the tribe warmly solicited Abu Taleb to abandon lis nephew, remonstrating against tho perilous innovations he was making in the religion of their fathers, and threatening him with an open rupture in case ho did not prevail upon him to desist. Their entreaties harl so much weight with Abu Taleb, that he earnesi'y dissuaded his relative from prosecuting his attempted reformation any tarther, representing to him in strong terms the danger he would incur both for himself ant his friends by persisting in has present course. But the ardent apostle, far from being intimidated by the prospect of opposition, frankly assured his uncle, "That if they should set the sun agcinst him on his right hand, and the moon on his left, yet he would not relinquish his enterprise." Abu Taleb, seeing him thus determined, used no farther arguments to divert him, but promised to stand by him against all his enemes; a promise which he faithfully kept till he died, though there is no clear evidence that he cyer became a convert to the new religion.
The Koreish, finding that they could prevail ncither by fair words nor by menaces, had recousre to violence. They began to persecute his followers; and to such a length did they proceed in their injurious treatment, that it was no logor safe for them to continue at Mecea. Mohammed therefore gavo leave to such of thom as had not friends to protect them, to seek refuge elsewhere. Accordingly sixteen of them, among whom was Mohammed's daughter and her husband, fled into Ethiopia. These were afterward followed by several others, who with. drew in successive companics, till their number amounted to eightythree men, and eighteen women, with their children. Ihese refugees were kindly entertained by the king of Ethiopia, who peremtorily refused te deliver themfto the emissaries of the Koreish sent to demand them. To thesc voluntary exiles the prophet perhaps alludes in the following passage: "As for those who have fled from their country for the sake of God, after they had been unjustly persecuted, we will surely provide them an excellent habitation in this world, but the reward of the next life shall be greater, if they knew it:"

In the sirth year of his mission, he had the pleasure of secing inis party atreagthencel by the conversiou of his uncle Inmma, $n$ mau of distinguished valour, nad of Omar, a person of equal note in Mecen, who had formerly inado himself conspicusue by his virulent opposition to the prophot and his claime. 'I'his new necession to the rising sect exasperated the Koreish afresh, and incited them to measures of atill more active persecution ngainst proselytes. But as porsecution usually ailvances the cause w!ich it labours to destroy, so in the present casi Islamism made moro rapid progress than ever, till tho Koreish, muddened witin malice, entered into a wolemuleague or covennat against the Hawhemites, and especially the fansily of the Motalleb, many of whom upheld the imposter, engagning to contrnct un marriages with them, nor to hold any farther connevion or conarerce of any kind; and, to give it the greater sanction, the compact was reduced to writing and hard up in the Cauba. Upon this hecame divided into two lactions ; the fanity of Hushem, es. ecpt one of Mohammed's uncles, putting themselves under Abir Tulei as their head, and the other party ranging themselves under the standard, of Abu Sophyan. 'Phis league, however, was of no nvail during the lifetime of Abu 'Tulel. The power of the uncle, who presided in the government of Mecea, defended the nephew against the designs of his enemies. At length, nbout the clase of the serenth year of the mission, Abu 'Ialeb died; and, a few days after his death, Mohammed was lefta widower, by the decense of Cudijah, whore memory has ben canonized by the saying of the proplet, bit of women, four ouly had attained to perfection, viza Cadijah, ihis wite; Fatima, his danghter; Asia, the
 ter of Moses.: As to Abu Taleb, though the prophet ever cherished a most grateflul sense of the kindness of his carly benefactor, yet if the following passage from the Koran has reference, as some of the conmentators say, to lis uncle, it shows that the dictates of nuture in the nephew's breast wore thoroughly brought into subjection to the stern precepts of his religion. "It is not allowed unto the prophet, nor those who are true believers, that they pray for idolaters, although they are inhabitants of hell." 'Ihis passage, it is said by some, was revealed on account of Abu Taleb, whis, upon his denth-hed, being pressed by his nephew to speak a word which might cmable him to plead his cause before God, that is, to profess Ishati, ahsolutely refused. Mohammen, however, told him that he would not cease to pray for him till he should be forbidden by God; such a prolibition, he atirmed, was given him in the words bere cited. Others suppose the uccasion to have been the prophet's visiting his inother Amina's sepulchre, who also was an infidel, soon nfter the capture of Mecca. Hore, while standing at the tomb of his parent, he is reported to have burst into tears, and said, I asked leave of God to visit my mother's tomb, and he granted it me; but when I asked leave to pray for her: it was denied me." 'The tivofold affliction of the prophet, in the loss of tis uncle and his wife on the same year, induced him ever after to call this "The Year of Mourning."

The unprotected apostle was now left completely exposed in the at-

## t.Ire: qr Moutainnt:

tacks of his enemies, and they tailed not to improve their advantage. They redoubled their efforts to crush tho pestilent heresy, with its author and abettors, and some of his followers and fricnds, seeing the symptoms of a fierce storm of persecution gathering, forsook tho atandonly chance of safety was in a tremity Mohammed perceived, that his Hict. He accordingly withdrew to Tary retreat from the scene of oonto the East of Mecea, where he had ayef, a village situated sixty miles pitality afforded him a seasonable shol unclo named Abbns, whose hosshort, and his prophetic labours unovail. Here, however, his stay was Unldy tuking his stand in the precinailing. He returned to Mecea, and of pilgrims who resorted annually precincts of the Canbn, among the crowds the gospel of Islam to the mully to this ancient shrine, he preached again rewarded his labours; and anous nssemblies. New proselytes his party fiom these pilgrim hordos, amoug the accessions now made to dina, then calied Yatrol, who, on theires six of the inhabitants of Merelate to their tellow-cimzeas the story return home began at once to in no measured terms, their new relixy of their conversion, and to extol, slance gave eclat to Mohammed in the and its apostle. This circumway to a train of events which tended ine city of Mlodinn, and paved the mote his final success in Arubin. In the more than any thing else to proon his interest in Mecen, he married A yeahan the ine, in order to strengthand shortly alior Sawda, the daughter if Zama daughter of Ahubcker, son-in-law of two of the principulmen of his party By thus becoming the ronage to his person and his cause.

## CIIAPTER VII.

The Prophet pretends to have had a night-journey through the Seven Heavens --Description of the memorable. Vight hy an Arable writer-Account of the Joviney-His probable . Motives in fitigning such an extravagant fiction. Ir was in the twelfth year of the pretended mission that Mrhom herl was lisvorred, according to his own account, with hist Mahomight journey firom Mesen to Jerusulem, nad trom twith his celebrated earen, under the conduct of the ungel Guthom thence to the seventh te seventeenth chapter of the Korangel Gabriel. In allusion to this nto him who transported his servan commences thus:-" Praise he e of Jerusalem, the circuit of which by night from the sacred tem. how some of our sigas : for of which we have blessed, that we might le and extravagant tale, which is he who heareth and seeth." This down by tradition. was which is not related in the Koran, bnt handraise his reputation as as probably devised by the impostor in order level with Moses, with whom and to put himself nuore nearly upon bly monnt. The story, hown Giod conversed, face to faoe, in the fly monnt. The story, however, is devoutly believed by the Mus.
sulmans, and one of their writers has given the following highly. wrought deseription of the memornible night in which it oceurred."In the darkest, mosi , besture, and most silent night that the sun ever caused by his absence, since that giorions phnet of light was created or had its heing; a aight in which there was no crowing of cocks to be heard throughout the whole universe, no barkings of dogs, no howlings, romrings, or yellings of wild beasts, nor watchinge of noctarnal birds; nay, and not only the feathered and four fonted creatures sus. pended their customary vociferations and motions, but likewise the wnters ceased from their murmuring, the winds from their whistlings, the air from its breathings, tine eerpents from their hissing, the mountains, valleys, nud caverns from their resoundings echoes, the earth from its productions, the tender plants from their sprontinge, the grass of the field from its verdancy, the waves of the sea from their agitations, and their inhabitanis, the ishes, from plying their fins. Andir: deel upon a night so wonderfil it wus very requisite, that all the crea. tures of the Lord's handy-work si:ould cease from their usuul move. ments, and become dunb and motion!ess, and lend an attentive ear, that they might conceive by means of their ears what their tongues were not capable of expiessing. Nor is suy tongue able to express the wonders and mysteries of this night, and should any undertake so unequal a task, there could nothing be represented but the bare sha. dow; since what happened in this miraculous night was infinitely the greatest and most stumendous event that ever befell any of tho posterity of Adam, either expressed in any of the sucred writings which cane down from above, or by signe and figures. From the subime nltitucles of heaven the most glorious seraph of all those which God ever ereated or produced, the inconparable Gabriel, upon the Inter purt of the evening of that atupencous night, took a hasty and precipi. tate flight, and descented to this lower world with an unheard of uind wonderful message, which caused an universal rejoicing on earth, and filled the seven heavens witi it more thm ordinarv gladness; and, as the nature of the meswage both required and inspired joy, he visited the world under the most wlorions and beantiful appenrance that even imagination itselfis capable of figuring. His whiteness obscured that of the driven snow, aud his splendour duriened the rays of the noontide suu. His garments were all covered with the richest flowers in em. broidery of celestial fabric, and his many wings were most beautifully expanded, and nll interspersed with inestimable precious stones. His stature was exceeding tull, and his presence exquisitely awful. Upon his beautious capacious forchead hic bore two lines written in charac ters of dazzling light; the uppermost consisted of these words, La illat $i l^{\prime}$ allah-'Thfre is no God uet Allah; and in tho lowermost line ma contained, Mohammed Rasoul dllah--iM Moinanmed is Giod's Messenger."

In passing from this poetical prelude, conceived in the true gorgeour style of oriental description, to the meagre and puerile story of the jour ney Itself, we feel at onco that the prophet's fancy suffers by compari son with that of his disciple, who could certainly, from the abow specimen, have given a vastly more interesting fiction of a celestiv tour than the miseruble tissue of' absurdity which appears in the fabr cation of the prophet. Without detailing all the particulars of th nocturnal expedition in which the marvels thickened upon him till
ollowing highly. ih it occurred. that the sun ever ight was created owing of cocks to ings iogs, no how. ted or noctarnal s, but likewise the m their whistlings. hissing, the moun; echoes, the earth routiogs, the grass a from their agitatheir fins. Andir. te, that all the crea. their usual move. ad an attentive ear, what their tongues rue able to express Id any undertake so ted but the bare sha. It was infinitely the ell any of the poster. red writings which all trom the sublime all those which God briel, upon the Inter a hasty and precip: rjoici unheard of um. inarv gladness hepired joy, he visite sppearance that even iteness obscured that e rays of the noontide chest flowers in en. were most beautifully precious stones. His uisitely awtul. Upon es written in charac these words, La illas
lowermost line wa God's Messenger." d in the true gorgeom erile story of the jour y suffers by compari inly, from the abon I fiction of a celestin
a e particulars of the kened upon him fill reaed upon him fill
had reached the utmost height of the empyrean, the following outline will afford the reader an ideth ol'its geaeral character.

While the prophet was ripasion in tis hed. with his beloved Aycsha nt his side, he was suddenly wwataed by the angol Gubried who stood before him with seventy !日i: af compunded wings, whi ter than snow and clearer than erystai. The angel informed him that he had come to conduct him to heaven, and directed him to to mount an animal thent stood iendy at :he door, and which was beIween the nature of an uss nai a mule. 'The mame of the beast was Alborak, signifying in the Araise toougae, "I"ar liuhtaing from his inconceivnble swifiness. Wis colour was a milky white. As he had however, remained inactive from the time of Chift to that of Mahom-med-there having been no prophet in the intersal to employ himhe now proved so restlese did refaiary, that Mohammed could not succeed in seating binself on his back tili he had premised him a place in paradise. Paciied by this promise, he gaffered the prophet quietly to mount, and Gabriel, taking the bridl in his hand, conveyed him from Mecca to Jerusalem th the twinkling of eye. When he arrived at the latter place, the departed nopticta and seints came forth to meet and to salute him, and to requ*i waserest in his prayers when he came near to the throne of glonv. Goin.e ent of the temple he found aladder of light realy fixed then ther, mal fying Alborak to n rock, he followed Gabriel on the ladder: till they reached the first heaven, where adnittance was readily granted by the pater, when told by Gabriel that his companion was no other than Mohammes, the prophet of God. 'This first heaven, he telis us, was 'll' of pare silver, adorned with stars hanging from it $\mathrm{b}_{\mathrm{j}}$ chains of guld. "ach of them of the size of a mountain. Here he was met by a decrepid old man, whom the prophet learned to be our father Adam, and whe greatly rejoiced at having sodistinguished a son. He saw also in this heaven innumerable angels in the shape of birds, beasts, and men; but its erowning wonder was a gigantic cock, whose head towered up to the second heaven, though at thedistance of five hundred dayy journey from the first! His wings were large in proportion, and were derked with unrbuncles and pearls; ond so loud did he crow, whenever the moming lawned, that all creares on earth, except men and mities, henvi the tremendous din. The recond heaven was of pure gold, and erotained twice as many angels Is the former. fimone these was one of such vast dimensions, that he distance between his eyes was eq̧ual to the length of seventy thouand days journey. Here he met Nonl, who begged the favour of his rayers. Thence he procepded to the thiid, where he was accosted $y$ Abraham with the anme raries: ifer. lit found the Angel of Death, with an immense tatle befora hiat, ou which te was writing the ames of the human race a they woctora, word bicitat them out as peir allotted number of days was camsierof. when tiney immediately fed. At his entrance into the fourth heaven, which was of emerald, e was inet by Joseph, the son of Jacob. In the tifth the beheld hie honored predecessor, Moses. In the sixth, which was of carbuncle, he and John the Baptist. In the seventh, male of divine light instead Imetals or gems, he saw Jesus Christ, whose superior dignity it ould seem that he acknowledged by requesting an interest in his
prayers, whereas in every preceding cuse the personages mentioned solicited this favour of him. In this heaven the number of angils, which had been incueasing through overy step of his progrese, vastly exceeded that of all the other deparimente, and nrnong them was one who had seventy thousand heads, in every hend seventy thousand mouths, in every mouth seventy thousand iongues, in every tongue seventy thousand voices, with which day and uight he was inceseantly employed praising God!

The angel having conducted hin thus far, informed him, that he Was mot permitted to attend him any further in the capacity of guide, but that he must ascend the remainder of the distance to the throne of God alone. This he accordingly undertook, and finally acconplished, though with great difficulty, his way lying through vaters snd snows, and other formidable obstacles, sufficient to daunt the stoutest hearts At length he reached a point where he heard a voice addressing him, saying: "O Mohammed, salute thy Creator." Mounting still higher, he came to a place where he beheld a vast extension of light of such dazaling brightness, that the powers of mortal vislon were unable to endure it. In the midst of the effulgence was the throne of the Eternal; on the right side of which was writen in luminous Ara. bic characters: "There is no God but God, and Niohammed is his prophet." This inscription, he says, he found written on all the gates of the seven heavens through which he passed. Having approached to within two two bnw-shots of the Divine presence, he affirmed that he there beheld the Bost High seated upon his throne, with a covering of seventy thousand veils before his face, from beneath which he stretched forth his hand and laid it upon tho prophet, when a coldnew ofinconceivable intensity pierced, as he said, to "the very marrow of his back."

No injury, however, ensued, and the Almighty thencondescendedito enter into the most familiar converse with his servant, unfolding to him a great many hidden mysteries, making him to understand the whole law, and instructing him fully in the nature of the institutions he was lo deliver to mankind. In addition to this he honoured bim with several distinctions above the rest of his race; as that he should be the most perfect of all creatures; that at the day of jndginent he should have the pre-eminence among the risen dead; that he should be the redeemor of all that believe in him; that he should have the lnowledge of all languages; and, lastly, that the epoils of all whom he should conque: in war should belong to him alone. After racelving these gracious as surancea, he retired from the presence of the Divine Majesty, and, returning, found the angel awaiting him at the place where they parted who inmediately reconducted him' back, in the same manner in which he came, to Jerusalem and Mccea.

Buch were the puerile conceptions of the prophet. Suoh the silly rhapsody which he palmed upon the credulity of his followers as th description of a most veritable occurreace. The story, liowever, car ried on the face of it such glaring absurdity, that several of his part forsook him at once, and his whole cause came near to being uttent ruined by it. At length Abubeker, the man of greatest influence a mong the prophet's friends, by professing to give credence to the thi at once put to shame the infidelity of the rest, and oxtricatde his leaf
ayes inentioned mber of angelf, progrese, vastly g them was one venty thousand wery tongue eevned him, that he capacity of guide, nce to the throne ad tinally necom${ }^{g}$ through waters en he daunt the Creator." Mounld a vaat extension rs of mortal vislon ence was the throne en in luminous Ara. ten ohammed is his Having the gates nce, he sffrinied thal hrone, with a cover. m beneuth which he
het - the wey a coldnew
thencondescendedio yant, unfolding to tim understand the whole inatitutions he wasto red him with several
ne sho unent he be the moss mase hould be the redem. the knowledge of al ing should conque ing these gracious as ine Majesty, and, re
ce whe :ame manner in whico
phet. Suoh the silt pf his followers as its ostory, however, cas at several of his part greate to being utter e credence to the till end extricatde his led
er trom this unhappy dilemma. He boldy vouched for the prophet's veracity.
"It Mohammed affirms it, it is undeniably true, and I will stund by Lim. I believe every word ofit. The Lord's elected camnot lie." 'The seasonable incident not only retrieved the prophet's eredit, but increased it to such a degree, that it made him sure of beiag able ever afler io inpose any fiction he pleased upion the easy faith or'his disciples.So that this senseless and paltry fable, which at tirst threatened to bhast all the impostor's schemes in the brd, did in fact serve, by a peeuliar combination of circamstances, materially to promote his suecess. abubeker henceforth had the honorary tile of "Faithtul Witness" bestowed upon him.
We learn from Sale, the Einglish commentator upon the Koran, that it is still somewhat disputed among the Mehammedan doctors, whethor their prophet's night-journoy was really performed by him corporeally, or whether it was only a dream or a vision. Some thiuk it was no more than a vision, and allege an express tradition of Moawirah, one of Mohammed's successors, to that purpose. Others suppose, that he was carriod bodily to Jerusalem, bnt no farther; and that he thence ascended to heaven in spirit only. But the received opinion is, thatit was no vision but that he was actually transported in the body to his journey's end, and, if any impossibility be objected, they deem it a Fufficient answer to say, that it might easily have been effected by an minipotent Being.
It is by no means improbable that Mohammed had a farther design forging this extravagant tale than merely to astonish his adherents $y$ the relation of a miraculous adventare. The attentive observer of he distinguishing traits of Islamism will not fail to discover innumeralo points of resemblance between that system and the divinely-reveal$d$ religion of the Jews; and it appears to have been an object studpusly aimed at by the impostor to assimilate himself as much as possile to Moses, and to incorporate as unany peculiarities of the Jewish conomy into his own fabrication as be could without destroying the mplicity of his creed. This fact is in leeping with what may be asfred in general terms, that the deseendunts of Ishmael, under a confiousness that the covenanted blessings of Jehovah have flowed down the line of Isaac and Jacob, have ever shown a disposition to imitato pat they could not attain. More striking proofs of this will appear in esequel. We adduce the observation here as affording a probable ew to the motives of the prophet in feigning this memorable nighturney. Hitherto ho had only imparted to his followers the Koran, pich, like the books of Moses, may be termed his vritten law. In king this revelation he had professed himself merely an organ through pom the divine counsels were to be uttered to the race of men. He poly gave forth what was communicated to him through the medium the angelic messenger, and that without interposing any comments expositions of his own. Accordingly, when pressed by the cavils of adversaries, his usual refuge was to affirm that the Koran was not book, but God's, and that he alone could give a just interpretation
of its meaning, which was in some places to be muderstood literally, in others allegorically. "There is no God but God, the living, the self: subsisting: he hath sent down unto thee the book of the Koran with truth, confirming that which was revealed before it.-It is he who hath sent down unto thee tho book, wherein are somo verses clear to be understood; thoy are the foundation of the book; and others are parabol. ioal. But they whose hearts are perverse will follow that which is parabolical thorein, out of love of schism, and a desire of the interpretation thereof; yet none knoweth the interpretation thercof except God." But having by some means become acquainted with the fact, that the Jews, in addition to the voritten lan dictated by God himself, were in possession of another, called the oral law said to havo been given to Moses at the same time with the former on the holy mount; and from him handed down by tradition from age to age; understanding, moreo. ver, that this law was accounted of equal authority with the written, while it had its origin solely from certain verbal declarations or dic. tates of Moses which were preserved in the memories of those who conversed with him; the prophet may from this have taken the histo: a similar mode of advancing his authority, and of giving the weigh and character of oracles to his private sayings. To this end it is no unlikely that he originated the fabulous legend of his nocturnal trave into the regions of the spheres. He was well aware, that could he oned succeed in malking it believed that he had been favoured to hold this high converse with God in the secret of his presence, and that he had been there fully instructed in the profound mysteries of heaven, he could upon this foundation orect just such a fabric of imposture as he pleased and impose it upon his credulous followers. Such at any rate was thy actual result. From this time forth a peculiar sacredness attached: the most trivial sayings and the most inconsiderable actions of the pro phet in every thing that regarded his religion. They were reverenth noted during his lifetime, and devoutly collected from traditional ef ports after his death, and at length brought together in those volume of traditions, which compose the Sonnah, answering precisely to it oral law of the Jews. And as the Jewish Rabbins employ themselv. in collating, digesting, and explaining their ancient traditions, by $m$ ny of which they make the law of God of none effect, so also amongth Mohammedan divines, there are those who devote themselves to the buy iness of expounding the Sonnah, as containing the sum of their theo gy, both speculative and practical. It was not without reason, ther fore, that the impostor was extremely anxious to have this marvello recital cordially believed, or that he should have introduced the Ml High in the Koran confirming the truth of his servant's asseveration "By the star when it setteth, your companion Mohammed erreth ? nor is lie led astray: neither doth he speak of his own will. It is other than a revelation which hath been revealed unto him. The hew of Mobammed did not falsely represent that which he saw. Will therefore dispute with him concerning that which he saw?"
rstood literally, in the living, the selfof the Koran with -It is he who hath rses clear to be unothers are parabol. ow that which is par. ire of the interpretahercof except God." ith the fact, that the rod himself, were in havo been given 10 ly mount ; and from nderstanding, moreo. rity with the writicn, declarations or dic. emories of those who lave taken the hint o: of giving the weight To this end it is na ot his nocturnal travi are, that could he one favoured to hold this sence, and that he had ies of heaven, he could inposture as he pleased ch at any rate was buy sacredness attached able actions of the pro They were reverent ed from traditional ic fether in those volum vering precisely to ins employ themselvy ient traditions, by m ffect, so also amongt e themselves to the by the sum of their theol without rcason, ther to have this marvello ve introduced the Mr servant's asseveratio Mohammed erreth n his own will. It is d unto him. The he which he saw. Will hhe saw?

## CHAP'IER VIII.

In Embassy sent to the Prophet from Medina-Einters iuto a I eague auith then-Seads thither a Nissionary-Another Incmutation sent to proffer him an Asylum in that City-His Enemies renew their Parsecutions-Determines to fly to Medinn-Incidents on the way-Makes a Solemn Entry into the City-Apostate Christians supposed to have joined in tendering him the Invitation.

The fame of Mohammed had now extended beyond the walls of his native town. While he was opposed, scorned, and derided at Meoca, his reputation was growing, and his doctrines secretly spreading at Medina. This city, anciently known by the name of Yatreb, and lying at the northern extremity of the province of Hejaz, about seventy miles from Mecca, had been distinguished by the early introduction of letters, arts, and sciences; and its inhabitants, composed of pagan Arabs, heretical Cbistians, and Jews, were frequently designated as the people of the book. IThe two principal tribes which now had possession of the city were the Karejites and the Awsites, between whom a hereditary feud had long subsisted, and the disturbances occasioned by the rivalry of these two tribes were enhanced by the disputes of religious factions, Jewish and Christian, which distracted all classes of citizens. It has been already observed that several of the inhabitanto, in a pilgrimage to the Caaba, had been converted by the preaching of Mohammed, and that on their return they had not been slothful in the propagation nf their new sentiments. That they were both sincere and successful disciples: of the prophet may be inferred from the fiet, that on this year, the twelfth of the mission, called the accepted year, twelve men came to Mecca, and took an oath of fidelity to Mohammed at Al Akaba, a hill on the north of that city. The amount of this oath was: "That they should renounce all idolatry; that they should not steal nor commit fornication, nor kill their children, as the pagan Arabs used to do when they apprehended they should not be able to maintain them; and that they should obey the prophet in every thing that was reasonable."When they had solemnly bound themsevles to the conditions of the eath, Mohammed sent one of his disciples, named Masab Ebn Omair to instruct these men fully in the principles and practices of the nev religion. Masab's mission was eminently successful. Among the proselytes were Osaid Ebn Hodeira, a chief man of the city, and Saad Ebn Moadh, prince of the tribe of Aws; and scarce a house in the city but numbered one or more converts. If the terms may be allowed, the excitement was little short of a Mohammedan revival.

The next year, the thirteenth of the mission, Masab returned to Mecca accompanied by seventy-three men and two women who had profesed Islamism, hesides several who were as yet unbelievers. The object
of this deputation was to protier to the apostle an asylum or any assistanco in their power, as they had learned that. from the strength and malice of adversaries, he stood in special need of auxiliaries. It was in fuct a political association which was proposed to be entered into, "in which we may perceive," says Gibbon, "the first vital spark of the empire of the Saracens." In this secret conference with the prophet, his kinsmen, and his disciples, vows of fealty and of mutual fidelity were pledged by the parties. The deputies from Medina promised, in the name of the city, that if he should be banished, they would "reccive him as a confederate, obey him as a leader, and defend him to the last extremity, like their wives and children." "But if you are recalled to your country;' they asked," will you not abandon your new allies?" "All things," replied Mohammed, "are now common between us; your blood is as my blood; your ruin as my ruin. We are bound to each other by the ties of honour and interest. I am your friead and the encmy of your foes." " But if we are killed in your service, what will be our reward ?" "Paradise!" replied the confident apostle. This treaty was then ratified, and they seperated, Mohammed having first chosen twelve out of their number, who were to have the same authority among them as the twelve apostles of Christ had among the disciples.

Abu Sophyan succeeded Aba Taleb in the government of Mecca, in whom Mohammed found a mortal enemy tohisfamily, his religion, and him. self. No sooner was he called to the head of the state than he determined to exterminate the apostle and his new-fangled heresy. A cour.cil of the Koreish and their allies was called, and the death of the impostor decided upon. It was agreed that a man should be chosen out of each of the confederated tribes for the execution of the project, and that each man should have a blow at him with his sword in order to divide the guilt of the deed, and to baflle the vengeance of the Hashemites ; as it was supposed that with inferior strength they would not dare, in the face of this powerful union, to attempt to avenge their kinsman's blood. The prophat declared that the angel Gabeicl had revealer, to him the atrocious conspiracy, to whish he thus alludes some time afterwards: "And call to mind, when the unbelievers plotted against thee that they might either detain thee in the bonds, or put thee to death, or expel thee the city; and they plotted ngainst thee; but God laid a plot against them; and God is the best layer of plots." The heavenly minister, however, who disclosed the plot, pointed out no way of defeating it but by a specdy flight. Even this chance of safety had like to have been cut off through the vigilance of his enemies. He was indebted for his escape to the devoted zeal of Ali, who wrapped himself in the greon mantle of the prophet; and lying down upon his bed deceived the assassins who had besieged the house of his friend. Mohammed, in the mean time, in company with his faithful friond Abubeker. succeeded in getting safely out of the city, and in reaching a enve three miles distant, called the cave of Thor, where the two fugitives concealed themselves three days from their pursuers. A tradition of his followers states that the assassine: havigy arrived at the mouth of the cave, were deceived by the nest
of a pigcon made at its entrance, and a web which a spider Iy woven across it. Believing this to be suffich a spider had fortunateman being was within, they desisted fiom allf fient evidence that no humanifest tokens of divine protection vouclif farther examination. The occasion, afforded him signal encouragensafed to the prophet on this tire destitution of human resources. "If ever after, even in the enrily God will assist him, as he asssistod "ye assist not the prophet, velievers drove him out of Mecea, the sod him formerly, when the unbeAbueker with him ; ) when they were both of two (i. e. having only unto his companion, Be not grieved, for God in the save; when he said down his security upon him, and strength is with us. And God sent ye saw not." Leaving the cave after thened him with armies which they mado their way as rapidly as after the departure of their enemies, towards the city of refuge, where the perils of their flight woul ( permit ing Mecca. Having halted at Kobay arrived sixteen days after leavthere met by five hundred of the citizens wo miles from Medina, he was pose, and by whom his arrival was greoted wad gonn forth for the purThe prophet, having mounted a camel with with a cordial welcome.head, and a turban unfurled instead of a bell an umbrella spread over his lemn entry into the city, which of a banner, made his public and soplace of his throne. This flight of the apoatle of to be sanetified as tho Arabic tongue Hejira, or more properly grand era of all the Mohammed nations the Hejra, has become the the same purposes as the year of our Say, being employed by them for nations of Christendom. It took our Saviour's birth is throughout the year of the prophet's age. took place A. D. 622, in the fifty-third The waiting adhevents of this friends who had by his orderssenger of truth, composed of those fore him, and the proselytes of Med from Mecca a short time behow flocked obsequiously about hedina whom he had never seen, henceforth became established among his person, and the distinetiorr or the companions of his fight, and his followers of the Mohajerina, appellations for the fugitives of Meces Ansars, or helpers; familiar "As for the leaders and the first of the Ma the auxiliaries of Medina. hose who have followed them in well Mohajerin and the Ansars, and hem, and they are well pleased in him; doing; God is well pleased with ens watered by rivers; they shall remain he hath prepared them garegreat felicity." shall remain therein for ever; this shall At this distance of time it is not poosible to zens had the principal share in tendering this decide what class of citind granting him such a ready reception. From this invitan to the prophet, ge, occurring in the first published chapter of the following pasfo Medina, some writers have inferred that of the Koran after enterThou shat the most active agents in introd nominal Christians of he thue bhalt surely find the most violent oftrollucing the impostor.nd thou shevers to be the Jews and the Idoll men in enmity against entertalnalt surely find those among them to bers (i. e. pagan Arabs); mns. This friendship for the true believers to be the most inclinable ans. This cometh to pass because thever's who say, We are Chriscometh to pass because there are priests among them
monks, and because they are not elated with pride; and when they hear that which hath been sent duwn unto the apostle read unto them, thou shalt see their ryes overflow with trars becnuse of the truth which thoy perceive thereill ; shying, O Lorl, we believe; write us down therefore with thoso who bunr sitness to the iruth: nnd what should hinder as fiom belleving in Gool, and the truth which hath come unto us, and from earnestly desiring that one foord would introduce us into paradise with the righteous people?" 'Vhis is eerthinly important as a historical document, and if the iderence drawn from it be correct, it aftords a melancho!y proof of the deep degeneracy of the oastern churches, that they should be amon; the fires to embrace the foul imposture. If that were the fact, it timinishes malpable demonstration also, that when men have once began to wworve and deviate from the truth, no limits can be set to the dagree of apostucy into which they are liable to fall. A fearful illustration is thus uffurdod of the law of the divine judgments, that where men, uader the cloak of a Cbristian profession, recoive not tho love of tuth, bat have nleasure in unrightcousness, God shall send then strong delusion that they should believo a lie, and that too to their inevititio ruin.

## OHAP'IER ! X.

The Prophet now raised to a high Pitcit of Dignity-Builds a Mosque-A Change in the I'one of his Revelations--The fuithful now commanded to fight for the true Raligion-His first war-like attempt unsuccessful-The Hailure compensated in the Second-Iccount'of the Battle of Beder-Ihis Victory much boasted of-Itiflicultics in tha Division of the Spoil-Caab, a Jeve, assassinated at the Instance of the Prophet.

From a fugitive Mohammed becnme a monarch. No sooner had ho arrived at Nedina than he tonnd himsel? at the head of an army devoted to his person, obedient to his will, and hlind believers in his holy office. He began at once to make arrangementa for a permanent seltlement, and his first business, alter giving his daughter Fatima in marriage to Ali, was to erect a dwelling have for himself, and a temple or mosque, adjacent to his own residence, for a place of religious worship, in which he might pubiicly pray aind preach before the people. For he now, in his own persen, combined the temporal and thy religious power; he was leader of his army, judge of his people, and pastor of his flock.

With the change of his fortunes, his doctrines began also to vary. Hitherto he had propagated his peligion by the milder arts of argy ments and entreaties, and his whole jncess before leaving Meccat to be attributed solely to the effect oifpersuasion, und not of force.-
"Wherefore warn thy pecple; for theor art a warner only; thou a not empowered to act with authority nver them." Up to the period his flight, he had utterly disclaimeri the use oiany species of coercin in propagating, or of violence in clefending, the principles of his ho
and when they read unto them, fthe truth which write us down nd what should hath comse unto introduce us into Ily important as II it be correct, it of the oastern race the foul ímdevisto into svish they dod of the law of jak of a Cbristian oasire in unrightat they should te.
-Builds a Mosque-9 ful now commanded to Pmpt unsuccessful-The Battle of Beder-I his
a of I of the S'poil-Cuab,a

No sooner had be ad of an urmy devo. believers in his holy for a permanent setdaughter Fatima ia $r$ himself, and a tema place of religious cach before the peo the temporal and thy ;o of his people, an
began aleo to varymilder nrts of argu
ore leaving Necca n , und not of force. warier only ; thou of y species of coercio principles of his ho
faith. In numerous paseages of th:r Kiorun, published at Mecra, he expressly decleres that his businese was only to prench nud admonish; thut he hat no uuthority i., anonpei nny one to embruce his rellgion; und that whether peofi! heiic sed ar disbelieved was no concern of his, but $n$ matter ilnt i-elonged solely to Giod. "We have also spoken unto thee, 0 Mohanincil. Ly revelation, snying, Follow the religion of Abrahinm. who wels ortisodos, and was no Idolater. Inrite men unto the way of the well by wisdom nad mild exhortation ; and dispute with then in the wost condeacending munner; for thy Lord well knoweth him: win strigeth firm himpath, und ho well knoweth those wh. are righty dineled. Wherefire do thou bear opposition with patience; but tis pationce whall not he practicable unless with God'e assistance. And int 1.11 thongrieved on acconnt of the unbelievers." "Itet the:e le bo vicinnte in religion." Indeed, so far was he from allowing his folfou rix to resort to violence, that he exhorted them to hat will. wack the injurics offered them on account of their faith, nud vhat fecreiles! limself, shose rather to quit the place of his birth, nud retia , , a distans villary than make any resistance. But this exemplary nioderarien, continucd fur the space of twelve years, seems to have been owing altogether to his want of pow. er, and the nscombence of his er emins; for no sooner was he enubled, by the assistance or die mer- cistedtis. tw withstund his adversarics,
 him and his followete in wrimid diverselves liy humnn weapons u-
 the divine permission to ast wen the ofiensive nifo, to attarek bie foes, to root out idolntry ut all hiza.ols, and to nige the true faith at the point of the sword. "War is cujbined you against the infidels.""Fight, therctore, nquinst tha fricnuls of Sntan, for the stratagem of Satan is wenk." "E tra hel."rers, takt vour necessary precaution against your enemics, aind either irnth to war in sepnrate parties, or go forth nll togrther in mborly." And when the months wherein ye shall inot be allowed to aftial iliem shall be past, kill the idolaters wherever ye slull find them nnol tulse them prisomers, and besiege them, and lay wat for tacern in every eonvenient place." "When yo encounter the untelinve.s. = this off weir heads until ye bave made a great slaughter amouf; th, $\cdot n$ : : and biad themin bonds; and either give them a free dismissi in offecwnod, or exirt a runsom, until the war shall have laid down it nume:" "Vorily, God hath purchased of the true believers their scuis. ynd itwil substance. promising them the enjoyment of paradise on ennlifin that they fight for the cause of God ; whether they slay or tee sivir, the promise tor the sume is assuredly due by the law, nud the :rosye!, asd the Kormn." This fierce intoler. ant, and sanguinary aplit wid be found to distinguish mest of the chapters revealed ni Medibis, ec thst it can fiequently he determined, from the tone and tempes pervering it. without consulting the date, whether the portion wst - evtadel beto:e or after the night. The proph.
 the terrific announcemeal atending the Woslem arms has heen, "The Koran, death, or tribute!" Even to the neesent disy, every other religious sect living under the goy a mereut of Wohanmmedan rations is eompelled to pay an annual tux as a mulet for their infidelity, and are suro in meet witli persecution, if not with death, if they onnose or vilify any
of the tenets of the holy prophet. Indned, every thing like argument or controversy with the unbelievers, tnough not absolutely forbidden, is far from being comitennnced, as we may gather from the following precept to tho prophet himself. "Let them not therefore, disjute with thee concerning this mutter ; but invite them unto thy Lord; for thou followest the right direction. But if they enter into debute with thee, God well knoweth that which ye do ; God will judge betwerll you on the day of resurrection concerning that wherein ye now disagree."

The prophet was now ennbled to put in operation a more effectual system of measures to compass his great ends than he hud hitherto had power to adopt. He had begun to wield the sword by divine commission, and he was not dispored to let its potency remain unproved. Yet the first warlike enterprise undertaken under the nuepices of the inartial apostle, an expedition designed to harrass the Korelsh, was unsuccessful. Huving learned that a caravan, the property of the hostile tribe, was on its wny from Syria to Mecca, he despatched his uncle Hamza, with a party of thirty horse to capture it. But the nearer upproach of the caravan discovering to the nesailants that it was guarded by a body of three hundred men, they deemed it prudent to forbenr an attack, and to return quietly to Mecea.

The shame of the prophet's failure on this occasion was more than compensated by the success of his arms at the buttle of Beder, so famous in the Mohammedan annals, which took place the ensuing year. A rich caravan proceeding to Mecea, and guarded by Abu Sophyan with between thirty and forty men, tempted at once the revenge and the cupidity of Mohammed. The spies of the prophet informed him that their rich and apparently easy proy was within his grasp. He adranced with a few followers in pursuit of it; but betore he could overtake the unprotected band, Abu Sophyan had despatched a messenger to his brethren of Mecca for a reinforcement. Roused by the fear of losing their merchandise and their provisions, unless they hastened to his relief, a troop of niue hundred and fifty men, among whom were the chief persons of the city, instantly obeyed the summons. Mohammed was posted between the caravan and the upproaching succour with ouly three hundred and thirteen soldiers, mounted, for the most part, on camels. Of these, seventy-seven were fugitives, the rest auxiliaries. Undismayed by this disparity of force Mohammed determined to try the event of a battle, and sisk his fortune, his reputation, and perhaps his life, upon the issue of the contest. The troops wore persuaded to engage the superior forces of the enemy, abandoning for the present the tempting prize of Abu Sophyan's wealthy caravan. The prophet animated them by his prayers, and, in the name of the Most High, promisod them certain victory. But however assured he might have been of divine assistance, he was careful to omit no human means of securing success. A slight entrenchment was formed to cover the flank of his troops, and a rivulet, flowing past the spot he had chosen for his encampment, furnished his army with a constant supply of water. When the enemy appeared descending from tho hill, Mohammed, alluding to his own party, exclaimed, " O God, if these are destroyed, by whom
ike argument tely forbidden, the following efore, disjute thy Loord; for to debate with juige between n ye now disu-
more effectual Jad bitherto had by divine commaln unproved. nuepices of the
le Koreish, property of the e despatched his ture it. But the assailants thut it eened it prudent
on was more than of Beder, so faby ensuing year. by Abu Sophyan he revenge and the
informed hin grasp. He ad that he could overtile a messenger to lis the fear of losing hastened to his rehom were the chicf succour fe most part e rost auxilince etermined to try the n, and perhaps his re persuaded to enfor the present the The prophet auiMost High, promimight have been of means of securing ver the flank of his chosen for his eny of water. When ammed, alluding to cstroyed, by whom
with thou be worshipped on carth? Courage, my chitdren, close your ranks, dischargo your arrows, and the day is your own!" Before the armies, however, could engage, three combatants, Ali, Al Hareth, and Hamza, on the side of the Moslenss, and three of the Koreish, joined in single combat. The Moslem champions were victorious, and thus gave to both armies a presage of the issuo of the coming engagement. At the commencement of the battlo, the prophet, together with Abubeher, mounted a kind of throne or pulpit, carnestly asking of God the assistance of Gabriel with three thousand angels; but when his army appeared to waver, he started from his place of prayor, threw himself upon a horse, and casting a handful of sand into the nir, exclaiming, "Confusion fill their fuces!" rushed upon the enemy. Fanaticism rendered his followers invincible. The forces of the Koreish wero unable to break the ranks or to resist the furious charges of his confiding soldiers. They trembled and fled, leaving seventy of their bravest men dead on the field, and seventy prisoners to grace the first victory of the fuithful. Of the Moslems, only fourteen were slain, whose names have beea handed down to posterity, and enrolled among the list of martyrs, whose memory the pious Mussulman is taught to cherish with devout veneration. 'Tho dead bodies of the Koreish were stripped, and with a' savage barbarity cast into a well; two of the most obnoxious prisoners were punished with death, and the ransom of the others fised at four thousand drams of silver. This sum would compensate, in a measure, for the escape of the booty; for, notwithstanding the 'defeat, Abu Sophyan managed to effect a decent retreat, and to arrive safely at Mecea with the greater part of the caravan. The spoils however arising from the ransom of the prisoners, and the partial plunder of the caravan, amounted te a considerable sum, the division of which had like to have proved fatal to the victors themselves. For of the two parties composing the prophet's army the Ansars, or auxiliaries, being the most nu. merous, laid claim to the greatest share. The Mohajerins, from being first in the faith, assumed equal, at least, if not superior, merit to that of their comrades, and a furious altercation ensued. Mohammed, in order to put an end to the contention, feigned a seasonable revelation fom Heaven, in which orders were given him to divide the booty equal$y$, after having deducted a fifth part for the uses of tho prophet, and certain specified purposes of charity. "In the name of the most merviful God: They will ask thee concerning the spoils: Answer, The livision of the spoils belongeth unto God and the npostle: therefore, car God and compose the matter amicably among you; and obey God and his apostle, if ye bo true believers." "Know that whenever ye tain any spoils, a fifth part thereof belongeth unto God and to the apos1 e, and his kindred, and the orphans, and the poor, and the traveller." The part which the prophet adjudged to himself on this oceasion, apounted to several thousand drams, or dirams, of silver; how much of his sum he allotted to "the poor, the orphans, and the traveller," hisory gives us no intimation.
The success of Mohammed, with his littlo band of devotees, at the 7
battle of Beder, is frequently alluded to in the Kuran in a styto of selfsatifiod vaunting and trimmph, and is often apgeated to by his follow. cre as nothing less than n miracnlous attestation of Gind himself in favour of the prophet. "Ye have niready had a minucle shown you in two armies which attacked each other: one army fought for Gods truo religion, hut the other wereinfilels; they saw the falthful twien as many as thenselves in their own eye-sight ; for fiod strengthencth with his help whom he pleaseth." Besides the mirncle of the infidels seeing the Moslem army doubie to what it was, two others are said to have been wrought on this memorable occaston. 1. The sand or gravel which Mohammed threw into the nir is said to have been carriett by the power of God with such force ngainst the fices of the enemy that they immediately turned their backs and fled. "A nd ye slew not those who were slain at Beder yourselves, hut God slew them. Neither didst thou, OMohammed, cast the gravel into their eyes, when thou didst seem to cast it ; but God cast it." 2. Wenre nlso taught. that God sent down to the prophet's nid, first a thousand, and afterwards three thousand angrels, having their heads adorned with white and yellow sashes, the ends of which hung down between their shoul. ders; and that this troop of celestial nuxiliaries, horne upon black and white horses, and headed by Gabriel upon his steed Hiazum, re. ally did all the exccution in the defeat of the Koreish, though Mohammed's men foaght bravely, and, until better instructed, gave the credit of the victory entirely to themselves. "And God had alrendy gi. ven you the victory at Beder, when ye were inferior in numbers; therefore, fear God, that ye may be thankful. When thou saidst unto the faithful, Is it not enough for you, that your Inrid should assist you with three thousand engels, sent down from Heaven. Verily, if ye persevere, and fear God, and your enconies come upon you suddenly, your Lord will assist you with five thousand angels, distinguished by their horses and attire.

The vindictive spirit of the prophet was strikingly evinced not long after this event by the assessination of Cnat, the son of Al-Ashraf, a Jew. This man, having a genius for poetry, and being inveterately oppased to Mohammed, went to Mlecca after tho battlo of Beder, and with a view to excite the Koreish to revenge, deplored in touching verses tho unhappy fate of those of their brethren who had fallen while valiantly resisting a renegade prophet, with his band of marauders He afterward returned to Medina, and had the hardihood to recite his poems to the people within the walls of that eity. Mohammed was 80 exceedingly provoked by the audacity of the poet, who mast, indeed, have been possessed of the highest phrensy of his tribe to promise limself impunity in these eircunstances, that he exclaimed, "Who will deliverme from the son of Al-Ashraf:" A certain namesake of the prophet, Mohammed, the son of Mosalama, a ready tool of his master. replied, "I, O prophet of God, will rid you of him." Canb was soon after murdered while entertaining one of the apostle's followers.
in a style ofself to by his tiollow. :od limself in fale shown you in fought for Gorls he filthful twise iod streng theneth te of the intidels others are sald to Thesand or graanve been carried ess of the eneny :Andye slew not slew them. Nei, their eyes, when Vo are also taught. ousand, and nfer. idorned with white etween the ir shoul. horne upon blach sh, thourt ueted agh Moham. Gord had already $g$ b r In numbers ; there. thou snidst unto the d should assist fou aven. Verily, if ye upon you suddenly, els, distinguished by
by evinced not long son of Al-A shraf, a hid being inveterately battle of Beder, and eplored in touching who had fallen uhile band of marauders' ardihood to recite his Mohainmed wns 50 tribe inust, indeed, clai to promise hinr in namesal "Who will bly tool of his master iin." Caab wns soon stle's follo wers.

## CHAPTER X.

## Wohamnal allers the Fiblu-Many of his Followers greadly offended thereing -.Mohrmmerdan Institution of Prayer-. Ippoints the Fast of Rumadan-m Account of this Ordinance.

Os the second year of tho Hejira, Mohammed altored the Kebla for his disciples, that is, the point of the compass towards which they wero to direct their prayers. It was usual among the votaries of all the religions of the East to observe some particular point in the heavens towards which thoy turned their faces when they prayed. The Jows, in whatover part of the world they chnnced to be, prayed with their feces toward Jerusalem, the seat of their sacred temple; tho Arabians, tovards Mecea, because there was the Caaba, tho centre of their worship; the Salians, towards the North Star; the Persians, who deified fire and light, towards the Last, where the Sun, the fountain of light, arose. "Every sect," says the Koran, " have a certain tract of heaven to which they turn themselves in prayer." Mohammed, when he first arrived in Medina, deeming the particutar point itself a matter of perfect indifference, and with a riew probably to ingratiate himself with the Jews, directed his diseiples to pray towards Jerusalem, which he used to call the Holy City, the City of the Prophets, and which he, at one time, intended to have made the graad seat of his worship, and the place of pilgrimage to his followers. But finding tho Jews too intractable, or that his other converts still retained a superstitious regard for the temple of Mecca, for so many ages the place of idolatrous resort, and thinking it would tend to concilinte the inhabitants of that city, if he kept up the sanctity of their temple, he, at the end of six or seren months, repealed his former law regulating the Kebla, and thenceforward required all the faithful to offer their supplications with their fices directed tbwards Mecca. Though not now in actual possession of that eity, yet anticipating the time when it would be in the hands of Moslem masters, he fixed upen it as the future "holy city" of his follovers. "From what place soever thou comest forth, turn thy face towards the holy tomple ; and wherever ye be, thitherward turm your faces, lest men have matter of dispute against you." This change was indeed an offence to many of his disciples, from its indicating a simgular degree of fickleness in a professed prophet, and large numbers accordingly forsook him altogether on account of it. But his growing aversion to the Jews made him steadfast in the present alteration, to which he thus alludes in the Koran: "The foolish men will say, What hath turned them from their Kebla towards which they formerly prayed? Say, Unto God belongeth the East and the West : he direeteth whom he pleaseth in the right way." "Wo have secn thee turn about thy face towards heaven with meertainty: but we canse thee in turn thyself towards a

Kebla that will please thee. Turn therefore thy face towards the holy temple of Mecca; and, wherever ye be, turn your faces towards that place." "Verily, although thou shouldst show unto those to whom the Scripture hath been given all kinds of signs, yet they will not follow thy Kebla; nor will one part of them follow their Kebla; nor will one part of them follow the Kebla of the other." The bearing or situation of Mecca, with its holy temple, from any particular region of the Mohammedan world, is pointed out within their mosques by a niche, which go verns the direction of their faces; and without, by tha situation of the doors which open in the galleries of the minarets. There are also tables calculated for the parpose of readily finding out their Kebla, when they have no other means of ascertaining the right direction.

No duty enjoined by the Mohammedan creed is more prominent than that of prayer. The prophet himsetf used to call prayer "the pillar of religion and the key of paradise," and to say that there could be no good in that religion which dispensed with it. He therefore prescribed to his followers five stated seasons in the space of twenty-four hours for the performance of their devotions. 1. Ir. the morning, between daybreak and sunrise. 2. Just after noon, when the sun begins to decline from the meridian. 3. At the middle hour between noon and sunset.4. Between sunset and dark. 5. An hour and a half after night has fully closed in. At these times, of which public notice is given by the muezzins, or criers, from the galleries of the minarets attached to the mosques-for the Mohammedins use no bells-every conscientious Moslem engages in this solemn duty, either in a mosque, or by spreading his handkerchief, and kneeling in any clean place upon the ground. Such extreme sacredness do they attach to this part of worship, and such intensity of spirit do thoy hold themselves bound to attend upon it, that the most' pressing emergency, that the bursting out of a fire in their chamber, or the sudden irruption of an armed enemy in their gates or camps is not considered a snflicient wurront for their abruptly breaking off their prayers. Nay, the very act of coughing, spitting, sneezing, or rubbing their skin in consequence of a fly-bite, in the midsc of their prayers, ronders ali the past null and void, and obliges them to begin their devotions anew. In the act of prayer they make nse of a great yariaty af postures and gestures, such as putting their hands one on the other before them, bending their body, kneeling, touching the ground with their foreheads, moving the head from side to side, and several others, among which it is impossible to distinguish those enjoined by Mohammed himself from those which were common among the ancicit Arab tribes befare ie arose. Stillit is affirned by travellers, that, notwithstanding the scrupulous preciseness of the Moslem devotions, no people are more deeply tinctured with the pharisaical spirit of ostentation, or love to pray in the market-places, and in the corners of the strects, that they may be seen of men, and obtain their praise. Among the 'Iurks especially it is said that wherever they find the greatest concourse of of spectators, particularly if they be Christians, there they are ever sure on epread their handkerchiefs, whatever inconvenienges may attend the
wards the holy es towards that se to whom the 11 not follow thy or will one part or situation of of the Moham. niche, which go situation of tho here are also ta,eir Kebla, when ection. e prominent than er "the pillar of here could be no refore prescribed nty-four hours for ing, between dayoogins to decline after night has ful. ice is given by the ets attached to the very conscientions sque, or by spreade upon the ground. $f$ worship, and such attend upon it, that It of a fire in their $y$ in their gates or abruptly breaking itting, sncezing, or the midst of their iges them to begin e use of a great var hands one on the puching the ground side, and several those enjoined by among the ancient ellers, that, notwithevotions, no pesple t of ostentation, or of the streets, that Among the Turks catest concoursc of they are ever sure fes may at!nid the
location, and begin their adorations. In these petitions, a very prominent object of request is, that God would grant the blessing of dissensions, wars, and tumults to be enkindled among Christians; and the rumours of such joyful events are hailed as tokens of his gracious answers to their prayers.
On the same ycar the prophet iatroduced into his religion the holy fast of Ramadan, or Ramazan, so called from its being continued thro the whole of this month, which is the ninth in the order of the montbs of the Arabic year. Of this dinty Mohammed used to say, it was "the gate of religion," and that "the odour of the mouth of him that fasted is more gratefin to God than that of musk." An ncceptable fast, according to the Moslen docirine, inclades abstinence from food, the restraining all the senses and members from their accustomed gratifications, and the withdrawment of the thonghts from every thing but God. The institution is thus announced in the Korar: "O true believers, a fast is ordained you, as it was ordained unto those before you, that ye may fear God. A certain number of days shall ye fust ; but he among you who shall be sick, or on nourney, shall fast an equal number of other days. And those who can keep it and do not, must redeem their neglect by maintaining of a poor man. But if ye fist, it will be heter fir you, if ge knew it.' The month of Ramadan shall ye fast, in which the Koran was sent down from Heaven, a direction unto men." By the law of their religion, therefore, the disciples of Islam are required to last, while the sun is above the horizon, during the entire month of Ramadan, from the timo the new moon first appears, till the appear-, poce of the next new moon. Throughout that period they abstain Whally from the pleasures of the table, the pipe, and the harem; they peither ent, drink, nor receive any thing into their mouths during the fay, till the evening Inmps, hung around the minarets, are lighted by the Inam, or priest of the mosque, when they are relensed from the bligations of abstinence. They then give themselves, without resraint, to the pleasires of the palate, nnd compensate in fult measure or the penance of the day by the indulgence of the night. This is conpued, according to the law of the prophet, "till they can plainly disnexieh a white thread from a black thread by tio day-break," when be season of self-denial commences again for the ensuing day. As post of the Mohnmmedans, however, are not too scrupulous to quell he annoyance of appetite by sleeping nway the hours of the day, the bservance of the fast of Ramadan is little more than turning day into ght, and night into day. As the Arabic year is lunar, euch month a period of thirty-three years, falls into all the different seasons of the. blar year, and consequently the observance of the fast, when the onth of Ramadan orcurs in summer, is rendered, by the length nnd pat of the days, extremely rigorous and trying; especially as the poor restill compelled to labour during the day; and yet are forbidden, pon раia of death, to nssuage their thirst hy a drop of water.

## CHAPTER XI.

The Kurcish underLake a new Fixpedition against the Prophot-The Batte of Ohod-Mohammed and kis Aiml; entircly defeated-His followers marmur -The Propht's poor devices io retriceve the disgrace incurred in this ac-tion-Resolves it mainly into the doctrine of Predestination-lHine ant Ciames of chance forbidden-Suphuan, son of Cateb, slain-War of the 1)itch.

The resentment of Abu Sophyan and the citizens of Mecca, for the loss and the disgrace sustained the preceding year, stimukated them to undertake a new expedtion against the warlike apostle. The Korcish accordingly assemided an army of thee thousand men under the com. mand of Abu Sophyan, and proeeoded to besiege their enemy in the city (f Medina. Rohammed, being much inferior in numbers to the invading army, determined at frst to await and roccive their attack within the walls of the city. But the ardour of his men, enkindled by the recollection of their former sacceess, conld not brook restraint ; they claanorously demanded to be led out io battle; and he unwisely yielded to their request. Impelled, also, hiaself, by the same spirit of rash confidence, be unwarily promised them certain victory. The prophetic por: crs of the apostle were to be estimated by the ovent. Mohammed, in every oncounter, sesms to have manifosted, in a high degree, the talents of a general. In the present instanoc his army, consisting of about one Ciousand men, was advantagcously posted on the declivity of the mu: tain Ohod, four miles to the north of Medina. Three standards w confided each one to a separate tribc, while the great standard was carried before the prophet, and a chosen band of fifty archers were stationed in the rear, with peremptory orders to remain there till commanded to the attack by Molammed himself. 'The Koreish advanced in the form of a crescent; Calek, the fiercest of the Arabian warriors, led the right wing of the cavalry; while Hinda, the wife of Abu Sophyan, accompanied by fifteen matrons of Mecca, incessantly sounded timbrels to aaimate the troops to the approaching conflict. The action commenced by the Moslens charging down the hill, and breaking through the enemy's ranks. Victory or paradise was the reward promised by Mo. hammed to his soidiers, and they strove with frantic enthusiasm to gain the expected 1 ecompense. Tha line of the enemy was quiekly disor. dered, and an casy victory secmed about to crown the spirit and valour of the Moslem troops. At this moment, the archers in the rear, impel. led by the hope of pluader, deserted thoir station and scattered th:om. selves over the field. The intrepid Caled, seizing the favourable opportunity, wheeled his cavalry on their flank and rear, and exclaiming aloud, "Mohammed is slain!" eharged with such fury upon the disor. dered ranks of the Mosiems, as speedily to turn the fite of the day:
'lhe fyying report of the death of their leader so dispirited the faithfur, that they gave way in every direction, and the rout soon became general. Mohammed endeavoured in vain to rally his broken troops; he fought with desperate valour ; exposed his person where the danger appeared greatest; was wounded in the face by a javelin; had two of his teeth shattered by a stone; was thrown from his horse; and would in all probability have been slain, but for the determined bravery of a few chosen adherents, who rescued their leader from the throng, and bore lim away to a place of safety. The day was utterly lost ; seventy of his soldiers were slain, among whom was his unclo Hanza; and his repntation as a prophet and apostle was in imminent peril. His followers murmured at the disastrous issue of the conflict, and had the hardihood to affirm that the prophet had deceiveil thens; that the will of the Lord had not been revealed to him, since his confident prediction of success had been followed by a signal defeat. The prop'ret, on the other hand, throw the blame on the sins of the people; the anger of the Lord had fallen upon them in consequence of an overweoning conceit of their stcurity, and because be had determined to make trial of their sincerity. "After a misfortune hath befallen you at Ohorl, do ye say, Whence cometh this? Answer, This is from yourselves: for Giod is almighty, and what happened unto you was certainly by the permission of God, that he might know the faithful and that he might know the ungodly.And wo cause these days of different success interchangoably to succeed each other among men, that God might prove those who beliove, and might destroy the infidels.-Did ye imagine that ye should enter paradise, when as yet God knew not those among you who fought strenuously in his cause; nor knew those who persevered with patience?Verily, they among you who turned their backs on the day whercon the 10 armies met each other at Ohod, Satan caused them to slip for some rime which they had committed." In order to stifle the murmurs of those who were overwhelmed with grief at the loss of their friends and relotives, he represented to them, that the time of every man's death is distinctly fixed by the divine decree, and that those who fell in battle could not have avoided their predetermined fate even if they had staid at home; whereas now they had obtained the glorious privilege of dying martyrs for the faith, and were consequently tramslated to the bliss of paradise. "O true believers, be not as they who believe not, and said of their brethren when they had journeyed in the land, or had been at war, If they had been with us, those had not died, nor had these been slain : whereas, iwhat befell them was so ordained.-No soul can die unless by the pormission of God, according to what is written in the book containing the determination of things.-Thou shalt in no wiso reckon those who have been slain at Ohod, in the cause of God, dead: nay, they are sustained alive with their Lord, rejoicing for what God of his favour hath granted them." With these miserable evasions did he excuse the falsehood of his prediction, and salve over the ignominy of his defeat. This doctrine of fatalism however, took a deep root among his followers, and to this day the Mohamaredans are the most
strenous sticklers of any peopic on earth for the doctrine of absolute unconditional predestination. "No accident," saith the Koran, "hap. peneth in the earth, nor in your persons, but the same was entered in the book of our decrees, before we created it."*

Abu Sophyan, for reasons now inexplicable, did not pursue the ad. vantages he had gained on this occasion. He merely gave the prophet a challenge to meet him again in the field on the ensuing year, which was readily accepted, although somewhat more than a year elapsed before the actual renewal of hostilities.

About this time, or in the fourth year of the Hejira (A. D. 626), Mohammed prohibited the use of wine and of games of chance to his followers. "They will ask thee of wine and lots. Answer, In both these there is great sin, and also some things of use unto men; but their sinfulness is greater than their use." The occasion of this prohibition seems to have been the prophet's witnessing their bad effects in producing discord and broils ameng his disciples. "O true believers, wine and gatnes are an abomination, of the work of Sutan ; therefore avoid them, that ye may prosper. Satan seeketh to sow dissension and hatred among you by means of wine and lots, and to divert you from remembering God, and from prayer; will ye not, therefore, abstain from them ?" The sins of the past, urising from this source, are graciously remitted on condition offuture nmendment. "In those who believe and do good works, it is no sin that they have tasted wine or gaming hefore they were forbidden ; if they fear God and believe, and do good works, and shall for the future fear God and believe, and shall persevere to fear him and to do good-obey God, and obey the apostle, and take heed to yourselves : but if ye turn back, know that the duty of our apostle is only to preach publicly." Under wine are comprehended also all kinds of strong und inebriating liquors; and though Mussulmuns oflax and libertine principles, and many such there are, will indulge themselves with the forbidden beverage, yet the more conscientious scrupulously avoid it, and not only hold it criminsl to taste of wine, but also to press grapes tor the making of it, to buy or to sell it, oreven to maintain themselves with the money arising from the sale of $\mathbf{i t}$.

Another act ofblood stains the fame of Mohamined in this part of his history. Being informed that Sophyan, the son of Caled, was collecting men for the purpose of attacking him, he ordered Abdallah, the son of Onais, surnamed Dhul-Malldhrat, that is, a man ready to undertake any thing, to assassinate his designing foe. Abdallah obeyed the prophet's command, and murdered Sophyan in the valley of Orsa.He immediately returned to Mohammed, who, upon hearing the suc-

[^5]ie of absolute une Koran, "hape was entered in
not pursue the ad. gave the prophet uing year, which a year elapsed be.
jira (A. D. 636), of chance to his Answer, In both into men ; but their of this prohibition yad effects in pro© true belicvers, of Satan; therefore to sow dissension and to divert you not, therefore, abrom this source, are ent. "In those who ave tasted wine or tod and believe, and d and believe, and God, and obey the arn back, know that $\because$ Under wine aro iating liquors; and and many, such there verage, yet the more hold it criminal to ing of it, to buy or to oney arising from the
ned in this part of his f Caled, was collectlered Abdallah, the a man ready to under. Abdallah obeyed the e valley of Orsa.oon hearing the suc. nee of the frivolous ap. round the caravan, cry. erciful. My cup is gone God grant my evening on out his life, may God of business on his head.' tune to the finder of the ts whe lost cup was not ravels in is gone; bu: vels in Mesopotamia,
cess of the cuterpise, gave himns a token of his fiendship the cane with which he nsually walked.
On the finh year of the Hejira occurred the war of the ditch, or, as it is otherwise termed, the war of the nations; which, but for pectliar circunstunces, would probably have resulted in the entire overthrow of the impostor. 'The Koreish, in conjunction with a number of the neighhouring tribes or nations, many of whom were Jews, assembled an army of ten thousand men, and making common cause against the grand adversary of their ancient religion, advanced to the siege of Medina. On their appronch, Mohammed, by the adviee of Soliman, or Salman, the Persian,* ordered a deep ditch. or intrenchment, to be dug around the city for its security, behind which he remained fortified for near a month. During this perind, no other acts of hostility occurred than a few ineffectual attempts to annoy ench other by shooting arrows and slinging stones. In the mean time, tradition says, the prophet was busily employed by his arts and emissaries, in compupting and bringing over to his interest the leading men among the enemy. Having succeeded with several, he employed them in sowing dissensions among the rest ; so that at length the camp of the confederates was torn to pieces with divisions, and one party breaking off afier another, nearly the whole urmy was finally dissipuited, and the little remnant that remained thrown into confusion and made powerless by the direet vistiation of an angry God. For while they lay eneamped about the city, a remarkable tempest, supernaturally excited, benumbed the limbs of the besiegers, blew dust in their finces, extinguished their fires, overtorned their tents, and put their borses in disorder. The angels, moreover, co-opernted with the elements in disconfiting the enemy, and by crying "Allain Acbar!" (God is great!) ns their invisible legions surrounded the camp, struck them with such a panic, that they were glad 10 escape with their lives.
The prophet was not insensible to the marks of the divine favour rouchsafed him in these illustrious prodigies, nor did he fail to hold them up to the consolation of his followers on subsequent occasions." 0 true believers, remember the favour of God towards you, when armies of infidels came ngainst you, and we sent against them a wind, and hosts of angels which ye saw not." Put, to whatever it were owing, whether to human or heavenly agency, it is certain that from this time the Koreish gnve up all hopes of putting an end to the growing. power and spreading conquests of Mohammed. They henceforth undertook no more expeditions against him.
*This Soliman, otherwisc called Sulciman Pauk (i. c. the pure), has acelebrated tomb erected to his memory near the ruins of the ancient Ctesiphon, on the Tigris. ltis among the prominent objects of curiosity to modern travellers to the East."From the ruins we went to the tomb of Sulciman Pauk, whose name has superseded that of the builder of this magnificent pile, in giving a name to the districe. The tomb is a small building with a dome; the interior, to which' they allowod us access, on our pulling off our shoes, was ornamented with arabesque arches, and the surroanding enclosure was used as a caravanserai."-Keppel's Journey, p. 82.

## CHAP'TEK XII.

The Jetes the spracial objects of Mohammed's Enmity-Several I'ribes of them reduced to Siubjection-Unelertakes a Pilgrimage to Mccea-1'he Meccans concluding a T'ruce with him of ten years-His Power and Authority greatly increased--Hus a Pulpit constructed for his Mosque-Goes against Chaibar, a City of the .Irab Jeeos-Besieges and takes the City, but is poisoned ut an Entcrtainment by a young Womnn-Is still able to prose. cutc his Victorics.

Whatever might have been the prophet's oarly reverence for the city of Jerusalcin, and his friendship towards the Jews, who, together with the sons of Ishmael, claimed in Abraham a common father, their obstinacy converted his favour into implacable hatred; and to the last moment of his life he pursued that unfortunate people with rigour of persecution unparalleled in his treatment of other nations. The Jewish tribes of Kainoka, Koraidha, and the Nadhirites, lying in the vicinity of Medina, were singled out as the next objects of his warlike attempts; and as they fell an easy prey to the power of his arms, spoliation, banishment, and death were the several punishments to which he adjudged them, according to the grade of their crime in rejecting a prophet or opposing a conqueror.

Our intended limits will not permit us to enumerate the various battles fought by Mohammed during the five succeding years. Suffice it to say, that, according to the computation of some of his biographors, no less than twenty-scven expeditions were undertaken in which lie commanded personally, and in which nine pitched battles were fought. The heart sickens in following a professed messenger and apostle of Gor from one scene of blood and carnage to another, making the pretences of religion a cloak to cover the most unbounded ambition and the vilest sensuality. A peaceablencss of the religion of Jesus may be dazzled by the glare of a tide of victories, and lose its detestation of the impostor in admiring the success of the conqueror. But to one who feels the force of Christian principles, no relicf is afforded by the view of arduous battles won, of sieges undertaken, or of cities sacked or subjected, by the prowess of a leader whose career is stained like that of the founders of Islam.

One or two subsequent expeditions, however, are too important in the prophet's history to be passed over without notice. In the sixth year of the Hejira, with fourteen hundred mon, he undertook what he declared to be a peaceful pilgrimage to the holy temple of Mocca. The inhabitants were jealous of his intentions, and while he halted several days at Hodeibiya, from whence he despatched an emissary to announce his intention, they came to a derermination to refuse him admittance, and sent him word, that if he entered the city, it must be by forcing his way at
the point of the sword. Upon this intelligenco, the warlike pilgrim called his men together, and it was resolved to attack the city. The Meccans, in the meantime, having more accurately measured their strength, or estimated their policy, and having bcen, besides, somewhat wrought upoa by an unexpected act of clemency on the part of Mohammed, in pardoning and dismissing cighty prisoners of their tellow-citizens, who had fallen into his hands, altered their purpose of resistance, and sent an ambassador to his camp to confer upor terms of peace. Some umbrage was given to the Mosloms by the faclity with which their leader waived the title of Apostle of God,* but the result was the concluding of a truce of ten years, in which it was stipulated, that the prophet and his followers should have free access to the city and temple whenever they pleased, during the period of the truce, provided they came unarmed as befitted pilgrims, and remained not above three days at a time. In the 48th chapter of the Koran, entitled "The Victory," the prophet thus alludes to "e events of this experition; "If the unbelieving Meccans ha.' sub. gainst you, verily mor, had turned their backs; and they wousu not auve found a patron or protector; according to the ordinance of God, which hath been put in execution heretofore against the opposers of the prophets. It was he who restrained their hands from you, and your hands from them, in the valley of Mecca." The entrance into Mecca on this occasion is vaunted of by tho apostle as the fulfilment of a prophetic dream. "Now hath God in truth verified unto his apostle the vision, wherein he said, Ye shall surely enter the holy tem ple of Mecca, if God please, in full security."
This event tended greatly to confirm the power of Mohammed; and not long after, he was solemnly inaugurated and invested with the authority of a king by his principal men. With the royal dignity he associated that of supreme pontiff of his religion, and thus became at once the king and priest of his Moslem followers, whose numbers had by this time sivelled to a large amount. So intense had their devotion to their leader now become, that even a hair that had dropped from his head, and the water in which he washed himself, were carefully, collected and preserved, as partaking of superhuman virtuc. A deputy, sent from another city of Arabia to Medina to treat with the prophet, beheld with astonishment the bliad and unbounded veneration of his votaries. "I have seen," said he, "the Chosroes of Persia, and the Cæsar of Rome, but never did I behold a king among his subjects like Mohammed among his companions."

With this new addition to his nominal authority, he began to assume
*"In wording the treaty, when tho prophet ordered Ali to begin with the form, "In the name of the most merciful God," they (the Meccans) objected to it, and insisted that he should begin with this, "In thy name O God;" which Mohammed submitted to, and proceeded to dictate: These are the conditions on which Tohammed the apostle of God, has made peace with those of Mecca. To this Sohail again objected, again objected, saying, "If we had acknowledged thee to be the apoatile of God, we had not given thee any opposition.' Whereupon Mohammed ordored Ali to write as Sohail desirod, 'These are the conditions which Mohammed, the son of Abdallal,'"' \&c.-SAle's Koran, vol. ©. p. 384, note.
more of the poinp and parade due to his rank. After the crectio: of the mosque at Medina, in which the prophet himself officiated as leader of worship, he had for a long time no other conveniente in the way of stand, desk, or pulpit, than $n$ trink of a palm-tree fixed perpendicularly in the ground, on the top of wich he was aceustomed to lean white preaching. This was now become too mean an aecommodation, and by the advice of one of his wives he causen a pulpit to be constructed, with a seat and two steps attached to it, which he henceforth made use of instead of the "beam." 'The beam, however, was loath to be deprived of its honour, und the realers in the marvellous among his followers say, that it gave an audibic eroan of regret when the prophet left it.Othman Lbon Aftan, when he became Caliph, hung this pulpit with tapestry, and Moawiyah, ancther Caliph, raised it to a greater height by adding six steps more, in imitation, doubtless, of the ivory throne of Solomon, and in this form it is said to be preserved and shown at the present day, as a holy retic, in the mosque of Medina.

This year he led his army against Chaibar, a city inhabited by Arab Jews, who offering him a manly resistance, he laid siege to the place and carried it by stom. A great miracle is here said to have been performed by Ali, surnamed "The Lion of God. A ponderous gate, which cight men afterward tried in vain to lift from the gromed, was torn by him from its hinges, and used as a bickler ciaring the assault!* Mo. hammed, on entering the town, took up his quasters at the house of Hareth, one of the principal inhabitants, and here met with a reception which eventually cost him his lite. Zeinab, the daughter of Hareth, while preparing a meal for the eonqueror and his attondants, inserted a quastity of poison into a shoulder of mutton which was served up at the table, Bashar, a eompanion of Mohammed, had scarcely began to eat of it, before he was seized with convulsuns, and died upon the spot. Mohammed, by spitting out the greatest part of what he had taken into his mouth, escaped immediate death, but the effects of the fatal drug had entered his system, and, resisting every effort of medicine to expel or counteract it, in somewhat more than three years afterward it brought him to his end. If, as the reporters of Mohammed's miracles affirm, the shoulder of mutton informed the prophet of its being poisoned, it is certain the intelligence came too late. The seeds of death were henceforth effectually sown m his constitution; and his row dectine ever after kept pace with his growing power. When Zeina was asked, how she had dared to perpetrate a deed of such unparalleled enormity, she is said to have answered, "that she was determined to make trial of his powers as a prophet; ithe were a true pro, het," said she, "he would know that the meat was poisoned; iinot, it would be a favoll to the world to rid it of such a tyrant." It is not agreed among the Mohansmedan writers what was the pmishment infficted upon this second Jael, or whether she suffered any. Some afiism that she was pardoned; others that she was put to death.

The progress of the prophet's disease was not such as to prevent him from prosecuting that successful course of conquests in which he wis
crectio: of the ad as leader of e way of stand, licularly in the while prenchon, and by the tructed, with a nade use of into be deprived g his followers rophet left it.s pulpit with tareater leight by ivary throne of nd shown at the
habited by Arab iege to the place to have been perorous gate, which ind, was torn ly assault !* Mo$s$ at the house of $t$ with a reception ghiter of Hareth, nlante, inserted a s served up at the ceoly began to ent ed upon the spot. he had taken into of the fatal drus medicine to expel terward it brought miracles afirm, ius poisoned, it is death were hencedecline ever after is asked, how slye enormity, she is make trial of his 1 she, "he would o a favour to the ony the Mohamthis second Jael, us pardoned; oth-
as to prerent him in which lie was
now engager'. 'The Jewa, the constant objects of his vengeance, again tempted his victorious sword. Ho proceeded against Beder, Watiba, and Selalima; places which ho brought under suljection; permitting their inhabitants to retain possession on condition of paying him one half the product of their date-trees as an annual tribute. On these terms they remained undisturbed in their towns and villages during the lifetime of the prophet ; till at length in the reign of Omar, who pretended that Mohammed in his last sickness had given him a charge not to permit two religions to coexist in Arabia, they were all cxpelled from their ancient settlements.

## CHAP'IER XIH.

Mohummed allegcs a Brcuch of Finilh on the part of the Nieconss, and marches un Army agrainst them-The City surrendered to the C'onqueror-a lbu Soghyan and Al Albus, the Prophet's Unele, declare themsidves ConvertsMeccu declavel to be Huly Grount-The neighbsuring Tribes collect an Irmy of four thousaad men to arrest the growing piecer of the ProphetThe Confederates cotirely overthroun-A rival Prophel ariscs in the person of .Moseilama-Is crushed by Culed.

Two years had scarcely clapsed when Mohammed accused the Mocpans of violating the truce, and made their alleged breach of faith a preence for summoning an army of ten thousand men with a design to wake himself master of the city. He was now strong, and his enemies Fere weak. His supe:stitious reversuce for the city of his birth, and he temple it contained, served to influence his determination for war. he time since the concluding of the truen had been skilfilly employed aseducing the adherents of the Korcish, and converting to his religion, renticing under his standard, the chiel citizens of Mecca. By forred marches he urged his large army rapilly towarts the city, and so unexectedly was the place invested by the Moslem troops, that they had arcely time to put themselves in a posture of defence before they were fiven to such extremities, that the surrender of the city at discretion, total destruction, seemed to be the only alteriative. In these circumances the former step was resolved upon, humiliating as it was, and min Sophyan, the former inveterate enemy of Mohammed and his refion, accompanied by Al Abbas, an mele of the impostor, came forth id presented the keys of the city to the conqueror. Nor was this all: ey both crowned their submission by bowng to the prophetic claims their new master, and acknowledging him as the noostle of God. his we may suppose was a constrained admission, made under the upfod scimitar of the furious Omar, and yielded as the price of life.

Mohamuned, thongh a compueror und an imposto:, was not habitually crucl; his anger was directed rather agninst the gods of his country. than its inhubitants. The chiefs of the Koreish prostrated themselves before him, und earuestly demanded merey at his hanes. "Whatmercy can you expect from the man you have wronged?" exclaimed the prophet. "We confile in the generosity of our kinsman." "You shall not confide in vain," was the gencrous or politic reply of Mohaunmed. "Be gone; you ure safe; you ure free." They were thencefort! ion unmolested, and places of honour and trust were still confided to them. On his entry into the city, of which he had now made himself absolute master with the saerifice of only three men and two women, whom he ordered to be exccuted, he proceeded to purgo the Caaba of its three hundred and sixy idols, and to consecrate that templo anew to the purposes of his religion. 'The apostle again fulfilled the duties of a pilgrim, ard a perpetunl law was enacted, that no unbeliceer should dare to set his foot on the territory of the holy city. On the day in which the prophet entered Mecca in trimuph, he ordered Bolal, his crier, to mount to the top of the temple at noou, and from thence to call the peo. ple to prayer for the first time under the new institution. This custom has been religionsly observed in Mohamenodan countries from that dny to the present, the crier, who is called muczain, still giving the people notice of the hour of prayer from the minarets of their mosques.

When the news of the ennquest of Mecea reached the neighomang tribes of Arabs, the Hawazine, 'lakifians, and others, hastily assenbled a force amominting to abont four thousasit men, with the designof erushing the usnrper hefore his dangerous power had attained to nay great height. Mohammed, appointing a temporary governor of the city, marched out with an army of no less than twelve thousand men. aud met the enemy in the valley of Honcin, three miles from Mecco on the way to 'Tayef. The Moslems; seeing themselves so vastly su. perior in point of numbers, were inspired with u presumptuous confl dence of victory, which had like to have resulted in their ruin. In the first encounter, the confederates rushed upon the fuithful with such des perate valour, thut they put nearly the whole army to tlight, many of them retreating back to the walls of Mecca itself. Mohammed, mount ed on a white mule, with a few of his fuithful followers at his side boldly maintaned his ground; and sueh was thls ardour in this crisit of the conflict, that it was by main force that one of his uncles ands cousin, laying hold of his bridle and stirrups, restrained him from rush ing alone into the midet of the enemy. "O uny brethren," he exclaim ed, "I am the son of Abdaliah! I nm the npostle of truth! $\mathbf{O}$ men stand fast in the faith! O God, send down thy succour!" His und Abbas, why possessed a stentorian voice, exerting the utmost strenge of his lungs, recalled the flying troops, and gradually rallied them as gain around the holy standard; on which the prophet, observing wit pleasure "that the fiurnace was rekindled," charged with new vigoul the ranks of the infidels and idolaters, and finally succeeded in obtain ing a complete victory, thongh not, as uppears from the Kornn, with out the specialussistance of angels. 'I'he giving way in the first in stance was a mark of the Divine displeasure against the Moslems if
shat habitually of his country. rated themselves
"Whatmer" exclaimed the nan." "You shall y of Mohanmed. ro thenceforth ief confided to them. o himself alsolute women, whom be Cuaba of its thre os ance to tho purce dutics of a pilthe day in what Belal, his in which ence to call the peo ttion. This custom utrics from that dny ill giving the people reir mosques. hers, neighiourios m, with the had attained rey governor of the velve thousand men. nites from Meca nscives so vastly sur
presum in their ruin aithful with such des ay to tlight, many $\alpha$ Nohamined, mount ollowers at his side ardour in this crisis of his uncles and rained him from rush to of truth succour! !' His unct g the utinost streng? tually rallied them g ged with new succeeded in obtain rom the Koma, wibl inst the Moslems fo

Hecir verwening contidenco in their superiar numbers. "Now hath (iod assisted you in muny engagements, and purticularly at tho batle ofllonein; when ye plensed yourselves in yoar multitudes, lmat it was no manner of advantage unto you; the enrth seemed to bo too narrow in your preeipitate fightht then did yo retrent and turn your hacks.Alierward Giod sent down his sercurity upon hin apostle und apon the fuithful, and troops of mugels which se suiv non."
The remaining part of the yenr was spent in demolishing the temples and idols of the subject Arubs. Sand, Cated, and others of his Moslem chieflinins were despmtched in various directions over the conyured provinces with orders to wuge a war of extermination against the idols of the ancient superstition. This pious crusade was crowned with the conversion of many idolateps, as well ns with the destruction of the "lying ranities" of their worship, und it is not stratuge that they should have admitted tho doctrine of the divtue unity, when the destroying sword of the apostle had cut of ull gods but one.
the prophet having now hecome in fact the sovereign of Arabia, ho began, in the ninth year of the Hejira, to meditute the conquest of $\mathbf{S y}$ rin. He did not live fally to necomplish this design, which was executce by his saccessors; but lie entered uponit, and not withstanding the expedition was undertaken in the hent of the summer, and the searcity of water subjected his men to almost intolerable sufferings, yet he suceeded in obtalniug possession of 'Tabuc, a towin on the conlines of the Greck empire, firon whence he made n victorlous descent upon the pdacent territorics of Damana and Eyla. Their princes ylelded to the lestiny which now scemed to necompany the arms of the imposter rherever they were turnel, and they were henceforth enrolled among is tributarles. This was the last expedition on which the prophet went prth in person. The fame of his power had now become so extensive md imposing, that distant tribes were awed into submission, and sent peiremissaries to tender to him the voluntary acknowledgment of their omage and fealty. The numerons deputations which for this and oper purposes, waited upon Mohammed this ycar, induced him to call "The Year of L'Embassies."
The close of this year was distinguished by the prophet's last pilgrimge to Mecca, called, trom its being the last, "The Pilgrinage of Val. fiction. An idea of the amazing increase of his followers since he last kited Mecea may be formed from the fuet, that on this occasion he is Id to have been accompanied by one hundred and fourteen thousand loslems!
Signal success in any enterprise seldom fails to call forth imitators drivals. Mohammed had now become too powerful to be resisted by re, but not too exaltod to be troubled by competition. His own expple in assuming the sacred character of an apostle and prophet, and ebrilliant success which had attended him, gavo a hint to others of probable means of advancing themselves to a similar pitch of dig$y$ and dominion. The spirit of emulation, therefore, raised up a fordable fellow-prophet in the person of Moseilama, called to this day the followers of Islam, "the lying Moseilama," a descendant of the be of Honcifa, and a principal personage in the province of Yemen. is man headed an embassy sent by his tribe to Mohammed, in the th year of the Hejira, and then professed himself a Moslcm: but on
his retura home, pondering on the mature of the new religion and the character and fortunes of its founder, the sacrilegions suggestion occurred to him, that by skilful manogement he might share with his countrymen in the glory of a divine mission; and accordingly, in the ensuing year, hegan to put his r roject in exceution. He gave out that he also was a prophet sent of God, having a joint commission with Mo. hammed to recall mankind from idolatry to the worship of the true God. He moreover apod his model so closely as to publish written revelations like the Koran, pretended to havo been derived from the same source. Having succeeded in gaining a considerable party from the tribe of Honeifa, he at length legan to put hiasself still more nearly upon $n$ level with the prophet of Medima, and even went so far as to propose to Mo. hnmmed a partnership in his spiritual supremacy. His letter commenced thus: "From Moseilama, the apostle of God, to Mohammed, the npostle of God. Now let the carth be hulf mine and half thine." But the latter, feeling himasolf too firmly extablished to stand in need of an associate, deigned to return him only the following reply: "From Mohammed, the apostle of God, to Moseilann, the liar. I'he earth is God's; he giveth the same for inheritance unto such of his servants as he pleaseth; and the happy issue shall attenr, those who fear him." During the feiv months that Mohammed lived after this revolt, Moseilama continued, on the whole, to gain ground, and became, at length, so formidable, as to occasion extreme anxiety to the prophet, now rap. idly sinking under the effects of his disease. An expedition under the command of Caled, "the Sword of God," was ordered out to suppress the rival sect, headed by the spurious apostle, and the bewildered imagination of Mohammed, in his moments of delirium, was frequently picturing to itself the results of the engagement between his faithful Moslems and these daring apostates.

The army of Caicd returned victorions. Moscilama himself and ten thousand of his followers were left deat on the field; while the rest. convinced by the shining evidence of truth that gleamed from the swords ot the conquerors, renounced their crrors, and fell quietly back into the bosom of the Mohammedan church. Several other insurgents of similar pretences, but of minor consequence, were crushed in like marner in the early stages of their detection.

N religion ithe the ous suggestion octht share with his ccordingly, in the He gave ollt that mmission with Mo. hip of the truc God. written revelations $m$ the same source. om the tribe of Ho nearly upon a level to propose to MoHis letter commen. to Mohammed, the d half thine." But stand in need of an ing reply: "From liar. The earth is th of his servants as ose who fear him." this revolt, Moseilt became, at length, ie prophct, now rap. expedition under the lered out to suppress the bewildered ima. , was frequently pic. cen his faithful Mos-
lama himself and ten eld; while the rest, amed from the swords ell quietly back into other insurgents of e crushed in like mar

## CHAPTER XIV.

The Religion of Uhe Prophet firmly estublished--The pinciyal countries subs jected by him-The effccts of the Poison make alarming Inrouds upon his in Public-His last lly his End approuching-Prraches for the last Tine that their Prophct was dead and Death-The Moslems scarcely persuadce buried at Altdina-1 he Story of the appcascd hy Abubeker- Hhe Prapuct
may be considered to quest of Mecea and of the Kecome permanently established. The consubmission of the rest of Arabia; and been, in fuct, the signal for tho offered, for a time, the show of and though seyeral of the petty tribes ware all cventually subdued. Besistance to the prophet's arms, they riod of his death, somewhat more theen the taking of Mecca and the peperiod ho had destroyed the idols of three years clapsed. In that short to the borders of the Greek and Prbia; had extended his conquests name formidable to those once and Persian empires; had rendered his against the disciplined troonce mighty kingiums ; had tried his arms perate encounter at Muta. His the formsr, and feated them in a desan impulse given to the Arabian nations now firmly est lished; and and enabled them to conquer, a nations, which induced iom to invade,' sia, the Greek empire, the wholarge portion of the glotse. Indie. PerSpain, were eventually reduced by thia Minor B:gypt, Barbsry', and himself did not indeed live to sed their victori us arma. Mohammed he commenced the train which see such mighty conquesta achieved, but and before his death had established result in this wide-spread dominion parts of Asia, the religion which ho over the whole of Arabia, aud some And now, having arrived at the had devised.
tenth of the Hejira, A. D. 632, the fatal effect yoar of his age, and the been so long rankling in his veing, began to to of the poison, which had ad more sensibly, and to operate began to discover themselves more day he visibly declined, and it was evid alarming virulence. Day by oa close. For some time previous to the that bis life was hastening "8 approach, and is said to have view to the event, ho was conscious of stic firmness. The third day before o be carried th the mosque, that he uns sissolution, he ordered himself is followers, and bestow upon them hight, for the last time, address ons. Being assisted to mount the pus parting prayers and benedicbe pious tenor of hies dying counsels, andpit, he edified his brethren by esson of humility and penitenee, such as whe own example taught a ated in the precepts of the Koran. "If we shall scarcely find inculpostle, "whom I have unjustly scourged there be any man," said the e lash of retaliation. Have I ly scourged, I submit my own back to Have I aspersed the reputation of any Mussut
man? let him proclaim my faults in the face of the congregation. Has any one been despoiled of his goods? the little that I possess shall compensate the principal and the intercst of the debt."-_"Yes," replied a voice from the crowd, "thon owest me three drachms of silver." Mohammed heard the complaint, satisfied the demand, and thanked his creditor, that he had accused him in this world rather than at the day of judgreent. He then set his slaves at liberty, seventeon men and eleven women; directed the order of his funeral; strove to allay the lamentation of his weeping friends, and waited the approach of death. He did not expressly nominate a successor, a step which would have prevented the altcreations that afterward came so near to crushing in its infancy the religion and the empire of the Saracens; but his appoinment of Abubeker to supply his place in the function of public prayer and the other services of the mosque, seemed to intimate indirectly the choice of the prophet. This ancient and faithful friend, accordingly, after mueh contention, became the first Caliph of the Saracens,* tho' his reign was closed by his death at the end of two years. The death of Mohammed was hastencd by the force of a burning fever, which deprived him at times of the use of reason. In one of these paroxysms of delirium, he demanded pen and paper, that he might compose or dictate a divine book. Omar, who was watching at his side, refused his request, lest the expiring prophet might dictate something which should supersode the Koran. Others, however, expressed a great desire that the beok might be written; and so warm a dispute arose in the chamber of the apostle, that he was forced to reprove their unbecoming vehemence. The writing was not performed, and many ot his followers have mourned the loss of the sublime, revelations which his dying visions might have bequeathed to them. His favourite wife Ayesha hung over her husband in his last moments, sustainging his drooping head upon her knee, as he lay strctched upon the carpet, watching with trembling anxiety his changing countenence, and listening to the last broken sounds of his voice. His disease, as it drew towards its termin:: tion, was attended at intervals with most excruciating pains, which he constantly ascribed to the fatal morsel taken at Chaibar; and as the mother of Bashar, the companion who had died upon the spot from the same cause, stood by his side, he exclaimed, "O mother of Bashar, the cords of my heart are now breaking of the food which I ate with your son at Chaibar.". In his conversation with those around him, he mentioned it as a special prerogative grantod to him, that the angel of doath was not allowed to take his soul till he had respectfully asked his permission of him, and this permission he condescendingly granted. Recovering from a sivoon into which the violence of his pains had thrown him, he raised his eyes towards the roof of the house, and with faltering accents exelaimed, "O God! pardon my sins. Yes, I come among my fellow-labourers on high!" His face was then sprinkiled

[^6] achms of silver." I, and thanked his than at the day of cnteen men and trove to allay the approach of death. which would have car to crushing in on of public mato indirectly the :iend, accordingly, the Saracens,* thio' years. 'I'he death ng fever, which do. f these paroxysmis of t compose or dictate side, refused his re ething which should a a great desire that e arose in the chamtheir unbecoming vemany of his followers which his dying vighis Ayesha bung whatchis drooping head ening to v towards the last liohting pains, whids. Chaibar ; which te pon the spiot as as O mother of from thio food which I Bashar, those around 1 ate with hin, that the him, he respectfully asked descendingly nce of his granted of the house, and with ny sins. Yes I com pe was then sprinklon
n writers upon the Arabs: own imposition or of the
with water, and that by lis own feeble hand, when he shortly after expired.

The city, and more especially the house, of the prophet, became at once a scene of sorrowful, but confused, lamentation. Some of his followers could not believe that he was dead. "How can he be dead, our witness, our intercessor, our mediator with God? He is not dead. Like Moses and Jesus he is wrapped in a holy trance, and speedily will he return to his faithful people." The evidence of sense was disregardcd , and Omar, brandishing his scimitar, threatened to strike off the heads of the infidels who should affirm that the prophet was no more. The tumult was at length appeased by the moderation of Abubeker. "Is it Mohammed," said he, " or the God of Mohammed, whom ye worship? The God of Mohammed liveth for ever, but the apostle was a mortal like ourselves, and, according to his own prediction, he hath experienced the common fate of mortality.:*
The prophet's remains were doposited at Medina, in the very room in which he breathed his last, the floor being removed to make way for his sepulchre, and a simple and unadorned nonument soine time after erected over them. The house itself has long since mouldered or been demolished, but the place of the prophct's interment is still mado conspicuous to the superstitious reverence of his disciples. The story of his relics being suspended in the air, by the power of loadstone, ia an iron coflin, and that too at Mecca, instead of Medina, is a mero idle fabrication; as his tomb at the latter place has been visited by millions of pilgrims, and from the authentic accounts of travellers who have visited both these holy cities in disguise, we learn that it is constructed of plain mason work, fixed without elevation upon the surface of the ground.

[^7]
## CHAPTER"XV.

## Reftections upon the extraordinary Career of Mohammed-Dcscription of his Person-General Vicw of his Character.

Tuus closed the earthly carecr of one of the most remarkable men, and of decidedly the most successful impostor, that ever lived. By the force of a vast ambition, giving direction to native talents of a euperior order, he had risen from small beginuings to the pinnacle of power among the Arab nation, and before his death had commenced one of the
greatest revolutions known in the history of man. He laid the foundation of an empire, which, in the short space of eight years, extended its sway over more kingdoms and countries than Rome had mastered in eight hundred. And when we pass from the political to the religions ass cendency which he gained, and consider the rapid growth, the wide diffusion, and the enduring permanence of the Mohammedan imposture, we are still more astonished. Indeed, in this, as in every other instance where the fortunes of an individual are entirely dispropertioned to the means employed, and surpass reasonable calculation, we are forced to resolve the problem into the special providence of Ged. Nothing short of this could have secured the achiovement of such mighty results; and we must doubtless look upon Mohammedanism at the present dry as a standing monument of the mysterious wisdom of Jehoval, designed to compass ends which are beyond the grasp of human minds, at least till they are accomplished.

As to the person, Mohammed, according to his Arabic biographers, was of a middling stature and of a florid complexion. His head was large and well formed; his hair smooth and of a glossy black; his eye of the samo colour; and so uncommonly vigorous and robust was his frame, that at the time of his death scarcely any of the marks or infirmities of age had appeared upon him. His features were large, yet regular; his cheeks full; his forchead prominent; his eye brows loug and smooth, mutually approaching each other, yet not so as to meet; and between them was a vein, of which the pulse was quicker and higher than usual whencver he was angry. He had an aquiline nose and a large mouth, with teeth of singular brilliancy and somewhat singular form. as they were pointed like the teeth of a saw, and placed at some distance from each other, though still in beautiful order. When he laughed he discovered them, and they appeared, it tradition may be credited, like hail-stones or little white pearls. Even bis laughter is said to have been full of majesty, and in his smile there was such a contraction of the muscles of the mouth and cheeks, and such an expression given to the countenance, as rendered it irresistibly attractive. In lis Jater years became corpulent; but he had always a free, open air, a majestic gait, and a most engaging address.

The Moslem writers are unbounded in their eulogy of the prophet's character as a man. Even those of them who treat as it deserves the foolish fiction of his having been taken by two angels in his childhood, his body laid open by a knife, his heart taken out, and pressed, and wrung, till its original corruptions oozed out in the form of large black fetid drops, when it was again replaced, purified and perfect, in his bosom, and the wound miraculously healed, still maintain that his moral qualities were such as to lift him quite out of the grade of the common race of men. But here the history of his life and the pages of the Kio. ran will enable us to make those abatements which, in respect to his personal accomplishments, we can only suspoct ought to be made.His followers extol his piety, veracity, justice, humility, and self-denial, in all which they do not scruple to propose him as a perfect pattern to
laid the foundaars, extended its had mastered in , the religious aswh, the wide difvedan imposture, ery other instance oportioned to the we are forced to . Nothing short ighty results; and e present day as a oval, designed to ninds, at least till rabic biographers, on. His head was ssy black ; his eye and robust was his ne marks or infirmiere large, yet regur eye brows loug and so as to meet; and quickar nad higher aquiline nose and a 1 somewhat singular and placed at some 11 order. When he rradition may be crebis laughter is said was such a contrac. (such an expression $y$ attractivo. In his free, open air, a ma-
ogy of the prophet's at as it desorves the els in his clildhood, t, and pressed, and form of large black d perfect, in his bontain that his moral ade of the common te pages of the Ko. th, in respect to his aght to be made.lity, and solf-denial, a perfect pattern to
the faithtul. His charity, in particular, they say, was so conspicuous, that he seldom had any moncy in his house, keeping 100 more than was just sufficient to maintain his family, and frequently sparing evan a part of his own provisions to supply the necessity of the poor. All this inay have been so, but in forming our judgment of the exhibition of these moral trnits, we cannot forget that he had private ends to answer, and we thus find it impossible to distingush between the generous impulses of a kind and noble ineart, and the actings of an intoresting policy. It is no unusual thing for a strong ruling passion to bring every other passion, even the most opposite and discordant, into harmony and subserviency to its dictates. Aimbition will sometimes control avarice, and the love of pleasure not unfrequently govern both. A man may afford $t 0$ be just and generous, and to act the part of a very saint, when he has no less a motive before him than to gain the character of a prophet and the power of a monarch. If Mohammed really evinced the virtues of a prophet, he doubtloss had his eyc upon "a prophet's reward." But we would not be gratuitously harsh in out judgment of the impostor's moral qualities. Wo think it by no means improbable, that his disposition was natarally free, open, noble, engaging, perhaps magnanimous. We doubt not injustice may have been done by Christian writers to the man in their unmeasured detestation of the impostor. But as long as we admit the truth of history, as it relates to lshmism and its founder, if is plain, that if he were originally possessed of praiseworthy attributes, they ceased to distinguish him as he advanced in life; for his personal degeneracy kept pace with his success, and his delinquencies became more numerous, gross, and glaring, the longer ho lived.
Of his intellectual entowments, ho followers speak in the same strain of high pancgyric. His genius, scaring above the need of culture, anaided by the lights of learning, despising books, bore him by its innate strength into the kindred sublinities of prophecy and poetry, and enabled him in the Koran, withrul. ninde's ur masters, to speat with an eloquence unparalleled in any human production. But here it has escaped them, that they praise the prophet at the expense of his oracles; that whatever credit, on the score of authorship, they give whim, so much they detract from the evidence of its inspiration;sioce Mohammed himself constantly appeals to his revelations as proceeding from an "illiterate prophet," and herefore carrying with them, in their unequalled style, the clearest evidence of being, not a human, bata divipe composition. On the point, however, of the literary merth of the Koran, and of the mental endowments of its author as evinced by it, the reader will judge for himself. We can more readily aspent to thelr statements when they inform us, that his intellect was acute and sagacious, his memory retentive. his knowledge of human pature, improved as it was by travel and extended intercourse, proFound and uccurate, and that in the arts of insimuatien and address he vas without a rival. Neither are we able to gainsay their acenunts when they represent him as having been aftable, rather than loquacipas; of an even cheerful temper; pleasant and familiar in conversaion; and possessing the art, in a surprising degree, of attaching his fiends and adherents to his person.

On the whole, from a candid survey of his life and actions, we may safely pronounce Muhamaed to have been by nature a man of a superior ratot of eharacter, mad very considerably in advance of the age in which he lived. Bat the nge and the country in which he aroso and shone were rude und barbarous; and the standard whic!, would de. termine him grent among the woing tribes of Arabia might have left him little more than, a common man ia the caltivated elimes of Europe, Mens charactere me moulded as much by their circumstances and fortunes as by their native genius and bias. Under another combination of accidents, the founder of the Mustem faith nnd of the empire of the Saracens inight have sunk to oblivion with the anonymous millions of his race, us the draps of rain ure nbsorbed into the sunds of his native deserts. His whole history mukes it ovident, that fanaticism, ambi. tion, and lust were his master-passions; of which the former appears to have been geadually eradiented by the growing strongth of tho two last. Anenthusiast by mature, he breame a hypocrite by policy; and us the violence of his corrupt propensities increased, he scrupled not to gratify them at the expense of truth, justice, Priendship, and human. ity. It is right, indeed, in lorming our estianate of his conduct in its most repulsive respects, that we should make allowance for the igno. rance, the prejudievs, the manners, the laws of the people among whom he lived. A heathen people cannot be fairly judged by the rules of Christimn morality. In the mere circumstance of multiplying his wives, he followed the common example ol'his countrymen, with whom polygany had bean, from the earliest ages, a prevailing practice. ind so, thourh we cannot justify, yet we may in some measure palliate, the musiter of Cimb and Soritham, it we supposed the prophet to lave viewed them us ensmies from whom his own life was in jeopardy; for intais no violence was done to the common sentiments of the Arab maee. Even at the present day, among the prophet's disciples all over the East, no trait is more common or more revolting than recklessness of life, which is doubtless to be uscribed as much to national habits as to a native crnelty or ferocity of disposition. We must, indeed, this but little of the morality of such a people, and must behold with indig. rintion a pretended prophet, while professing to purify the moral code of his countrymen, continuing still in the practice of some of the worst of its tenets. Here, in fact, our heaviest condemnation falls upon Mohammed. He did not observe those rules of morality which he himself laid doven and which he enforced upon others by such terrible sanctions. No excuse can be offered for the impostor on this score. He abused his claims as prophet to sciecn the guilty excesses of his private life, and under the pretence of a special revelution, dispensing him from the laws impo sed by his own religion, bad the femme sex abandoned without resery to his desires. "O piophet, we have allowed thee thy wives unto whow thou hast given their dower, and also the slaves which thy right hand possesseth, of the hooty which God hath granted thee; and the dangh ters of thy uncle and the daughters of thy aunts, both on thy fatherf side and on thy mother's side, who have fled with thee from Meca. and any other believing woman, if she give herstf unto the prophel in case the prophet desireth to take her to wite. This is a peculiarprig ilege granted unto thec, above the rest of the trae believers." The e cecdingly liberal grant thus made to the prophet on the score of ma rimonial privilege may be contrastad with the allowance mate to it
actions, we muy a man of a supeance of the age in ich he mose and whic!, would de. a night have left climes of Europe. umstances ind forother combination If the empire of the my nous millions of sunds of his native fanaticism, umbi. the former appears strongth of tho two crite by policy; and d, he scrupled not udship, and human. of his conduct in its owance for the igno. people among whom red by the rules of
nultiplying his wive ren, with whom po. ailing practice. tind me measure palliate, $d$ the prophet to have , was in jeopardy ; for atiments of the Arab het's disciples all over liting than recklessnns to national habits os e must, indeed, thin: ast behold with indig. purify the moral colie 0 of some of the woss anation falls upon Mlo. Wich he himself laid dom ctions. No excuse ca bused his claims 198 ate life, and under tha ffrom the laws impo doned without reserx thy wives unto whoor which thy right hant d theo ; and the davgh? , both on thy father vith thee from Mecal siff unto the prophet This is a peculiar prig
he believers." The ton the score of $m$ ?
the Howance mado to 10
followers. "Take in marringe of such women apapase yon two, dirce, or four; and no more But ifye fear that ye oannot act eguitibly towards so many, marry one only."
Respect te decoram fortids our entering into details relativo to this purt or Mohanmed's condurt :und character. But firow what has been already ndduced, the reader cannot have finled to perceive bow completely the prophet's imposture wax minde nin engine for promoting the gratification of sensiual passion. Wae of the grossent instances of his unhallowed abuse of the claims to which he pretented ore urs in the history of his intercourse with Mury, an Eryytimaslave. The knowledge of bis illicit amours wih this "possession of his right hat:" having come to the ears, or rather to the eyes, of one of his lawful wives, who thereupon reproached him most bitterly for his mildelity, he reent so far, in order to paeify her, as to promise with month never to be guilty of repetition of the offence. But the inflimity of uature having not long after triumphed newin over the strength of his resolution, the nad recourse to his revelations to cover the srandal of this shameless hapse. The expedient now resoried to forms one of the thackest stains upon the pnges of the Koran, and upou the einacacter of its anthor.It was nothinge leas than a pretended abzolution of the prophet from tio obligatior. of his onth. "O prophet, why thllest thou that to be probibited which God hath allowed thee, seeking to please thy wives; since God is inclined to forgive, and merciful? God hath allowed you the dissolution of your oaths, and God is your master." Here is an alleged dispensation of the prophet, which nust be construed as actually legalizing perjury on the part of a professed messencra of truth; one 100 who thes instructs his followers: "Perform your covenant with God, when ye enter into covenant with him, and violate not your oaths after the ratification thereof; since ye have made God a witness over you.Yerily, God knoweth that which ye do. And be not like unto her who undoeth that which she hath spun, untwisting it atter she hath twisted it strongly:" "Therefore take not your oathis between you decaitfully, lest your foot slip after it hath been stedfastly fised, and ye taste evil in this life, and suffer a grievous punishment in the life to come." This is lut too fair a specimen of the genernl character of the Koran. By far the greater part of its contents were fabricated to answer paticular purposes, which he could effeet in no other way; and this was an expedient which never failed. If any new enterprise was to be undertaken, any new objecticas answercd, any difficulty to be solved, any disturbance among his foliowers to be hushed, or any offence to be removed inmediate recourse was had to Gabriel, and a new revelation, precisely adapted to meet the necessities of the case, was granted. As an inevitable consequence, a vast number of variations and contradictions, too palpable to be denied, occur in the course of the book. His c mmentators and disciples acknowledge the fact, but account for it by saying, that whenever a subsequent revelation plainly contradicts a former it is to be considered as having been revoked or repealed by tho latter; and above a hundred and fifty verses are enumerated as having been thus set aside by atter-discoveries of the divine will. In this they are countenanced by the words of the impostor himself. "What ever verse we shall a-
brogate, or calase thee to forget, we will bring a better than it, or one like unto it." "When we substitute in the Koran an ubrogating verst in lieu of a verse abrogated (and God best knoweth the fitness of that which he revealeth,) the infidels say, Thou art only a forger of these verses : but the greater part of them know not the truth from falsehood." When this feature of their religion is objected to modern Mohammedans, as it was by Henry Martyn in his controversy with them, they reply, that "this objection is altogether futile; for the precepts of God' are always delivered with a special regard to the necessities of his seruants. And there can be no doubt that these must vary with the varying exigences of the timos in which they are delivered. The divine Lawgiver may here be considered as the spiritual physician of his people; who, like a temporal physician, prescribes such regimen and medicine: as are most likly to suit the wants of his patient."* The pupil here is certainly worthy of the master, when thoy both agree in teaching, that the grand principles of morality are not eternal and immutable, growing out of the very nature of the celaxation subsisting between the Creator and his creatures, but are mere arbitrary rules, subjected to to re laxed, modified, or dispensed with, as circumstances may dictate. Seeing that this pitiful device of feigning dispensations and abrogations of particular duttes subjects the immutable counse!s of the Almighty to the charge of weakness and fickleness, it is surprising that his disciples should have been blinded by so flimsy a disguise ; yet such is evidently the fact. And it adds another proof of the truth of the remark, that as there is no error or absurdity in religion too monstrous to be conceived or broached, so there is none too gross to be imposed upon the eredulity of others.

* Lee's Trranslation of H. Martin's Controversial Tracts.


## CHAPTER XVI.

Account of the Prophet's Wives-Cadijah-Aycsha-Hafsa-Zeinah-Safya -His Concubines-Singular Precepts in the Koran respecting the Wives of Mohammed-His comparative Treatment of Jexts and Christians-Predictions of the Prophet alleged by Mohammedans to be contained in the sacred Scriptures.

As the subject of women occupies a prominent place in the Koran, so in a complete history of the prophet's life his numerc- $\%$ wives, of which the number is variously stated from fifteen to twenty-ne, form a topic of too much interest to be omitted.

During the lifetime of Cadijah, it does not appear that she was ever
than it, or one brogating verst e fitness of that forger of these fronl falschood." ders Mohammeith them, they reprecepts of God ssities of his ser$y$ with the varying Tho divine Lawan of his people; sen and medicine: The pupil here is in teaching, that immutable, grow$\zeta$ between the Cresubjected to bo re 3 may dictnte. Sceand abrogations of of the Almighiy to 2g that his disciples et such is evidently ous remark, that as ous to be conceived :d upon the credulity
ial Tracts.

Tafsa-Zeinah—Safya an respecting the Wives be conristians-Pre.
lace in the Koran, so $\mathrm{rc}^{-}$? wives, of which $y-n e$, form a topic of
ear that she was ever
paincd with the sight or suspicion of a rival. Atter her death, when at length his reputation as a prophet had become established, and his authority too firmly rooted to be shaken, the reatraints which policy had imposed upon passion were gradually thrown off, and the most unlinited license in this respect marked his subsequent conduct.

His third and best beloved wifo was Ayesha, the daugliter of Abube. her, whom he married in the first year of the Hejira. Vaguo rumours of conjugal infidelity have cast a stain upon the character of Ayesha not entirely effaced even at the present day. They were nuc belioved, however, by the prophet, and the divine acquittal in the twenty-fourth chapter of the Koran has done much towards shielding her fame from reproact. "As to the party among you, who have published the falsehood concerning Ayesha-overy man of them shall be published accordugg to the injustice of which he hath been guilty; and he among them who hath undertaken to aggravate the same shall suffer a grievous punishment. Did not the faithful men and the faithful women say, This is a manifest falsehood? Have they produced four witness thereof? Wherefore, since they have not produced the witnesses, they are surely liars in the sight of God. Had it not been for the induigence of God towards yotr, and his mercy in this world, and in that which is to come, verily a grievous punishment had been inflicted on you for the calumny which ye have spread; when ye have published that with your tongues, and spoko that with your mouths, of which yo had no knowledge; and esteemed it to be light, whereas it was a matter of importance in the sight of God." Ayesha was married-such is the surprising physical precocity peculiar to an eastern climate-at the carly ago of nine; and survived her husband forty-eight years. Her memmory is held in great veneration by the Moslems, who have bestowed upon her the title of Prophetess, and Mother of the Faithful, probably from the circumstance of her being much resorted to after her husband's death, as an expositor of the doubtful points of the law ; an office which she performed by giving the sense which she had heard the prophet affix to them in his lifetime. Her expositions, together with those of Mohammed's first ten converts, form what is called the Sonnah or the Authentic Traditions, of the professors of Islam, which bear a striking resemblance to the traditions of the Jews. Ayesha was the inveterate enemy of Ali, the rival candidate with Abubeker to the honour of being the prophet's successor; and when at the last he attained to that dignity, she appeared in arms against him. Her expedition was indeed unsuccessful, yet she found means, some time atter, to excite a defection among Ali's followers, which finally resulted in the ruin of himself and his house.
Hafsa, the dnughter of Omar, was next in favour with the prophet. To her, as being the eldest of his wives, he committed the Chest of Mis apostleship, containing the original copies of his protended revelaions, from which the volume of the Koran was composed after his leath, by Abubeker. She died at the age of sixtyty-six.
Zeinab, another of his wives, was originally the wife of his servant feid; upon whom, as we learn from the Koran, God hal bestowed the
grace to become one of the earliest converts to the true faith. 'The circumstances which led to her becoming the wito of the prophet, form a story worth relating. Mohanmed, having occasion, one day, to call at the house of Zeid upon somo matter of business, and not finding him at home, accidently cast his eyes on Zeinab his wife. Being a woman of distinguished beauty, the prophet was so smitten with her charms at first sight, that he could not forbear exclaiming, "Praise be God, who turneth tho hearts of men as ho pleaseth! and thenceforth became violently in love with her. Zeid, when made acquainted with the circumsfance, was thrown into great perplexity. His affection for his wifo and his wish to retain her were counterbalanced by his sense of obligation to his master, who had not only freed him from servitude, but had also publically adopted him as his son and heir, by a religious ceremony at the black stone of the Caaba. Upon mature reflection he determined to part with Zeinab in favour of his bencfactor, whom he privately aequainted with his intention, at the same time giving out in pul). lie, that he mo longer retained any affection for her, in order to pave the way for a divorce. Mohammed, aware of the scandal that would ensuc among his people, from his taking to his bed one who stood to him in the relation of a daughter, made a feint of dissuading him from his purpose, and endeavoured to suppress the violence of his passion. But finding the flame which consumed him unconquera e, a chapter of the Koran eame seasonably to his relief, which at once emoved all impediments in the way of a union. "Aad remernber, when thou saidst to him unto whom God had been gracious (Zeid), and on wham thou also hadst conferred favours, keep thy wite to thyself and fear God, and thou didst conceal that in thy mind (i. e. thine affection to Zeinab) which God had determined to discover, and didst fear men; whereas it was more just that thou shouldest fear God. But when Zeid had determined the matter concerning her, and had resolved to divorce her, we joined ber in inarriage unto thee, lest a crime should be charged on the truc beltevers in marrying the wives of their adopted sons: and the command of God is to be performed. No crime is to be charged on the prophet as to what God hath allowed him." Here the Most High is represented not only as sanctioning the marriage, !but as conveying a gentle rebuke to the prophet, that he should so long have abstained from the enjoyment of this favour out of regard to public sentiment, as though he feared men rather than God! Zeinab hereupon became the wife of this most favoured of mortals, and lived with him in great affection to the tme of his death; always glorying over her associates, that whereas they had been married to Mohammed by their parents and kin. dred, she had been united to him by God himself, who diwelis above the seven heavens!

Another of his wives, Safya, was a Jewess. Of her nothing remarbable is related, except that she once complained to her husband of being thus reproached by her companions: "O thou Jewess, the daugh. ter of a Jew and of a Jewess." To which the prophet answered, "Canst thou not say, Aaron is my father, Moses is my uncle, and Molammed
truc faith. 'The the prophet, form , one day, to call d not finding him Being a woman with her charms at -aise be God, who forth became viod with the circum. etion for his wifo is sense of obligaservitude, but had rcligious ceremoreflection he detertor, whom he prie giving out in pubin order to pave the lal that would ensuc tho stood to him in g him from his purhis passion. But e, a chapter of the :emoved a! impedivhen thou saidst to d on wham thou also and fear God, and tion to Zeinab) which en; whereas it was n Zeid had determin. divorce her, we joill e charged on the true sous: and the com. - be charged on the re the Most High is fbut as conveying a long have abstained public sentiment, as hereupon became the th him in great affecer her associates, that their parents and kin. who divells above the
f her nothing remarb. to her husband of beu Jewess, the daugh. het answered, "Canst acle, and Mohammed
is my husband?" But in reference to these insulting taunts, an admonition was conveyed to the offenders from a highor source than the prophet himself. " $O$ true belicvers, let not men laugh other inon to scorn, who peradventure may bo better than themselves; neither let women laugh other women to scorn, who may possibly be better than themselves. Neither defame one another, nor call one another by opprobious appellations."
In addition to his wives, the harem of the prophet contained a number of concubines, among whom Mary, the Egyptian, wa his favourite. By her he had a soll, Ibrahim (Abraham), who diec in infancy, to the unspeakable grief of the prophet and his disciples. He had no children by any of the rest of his wives oxcept Cadijah, whe was the mother of oight-four sons and four daughters ; but most of these died in early life, none of them surviving therr futher oxcept Fatima, the wife of Ali, and she only sixty days.
The following passages from the Koran ovince that not the prophot only was an object of the divinc care, beneficenco, and guidanco, but that his wives also shared in the same kind providence, and that whatever instructions or admonitions their frailties might require were graciously bestowed upon them. From an i:firmity not uncommon to the sex, they had become, it appears, more devoted to the decoration of their persons than was creditable for the wives of a holy prophet, and had demanded of him a large allowance on the score of dress than he deomed it prudent to grant. Thay are thus rebuked: "O prophet, say unto thy wives, If ye seek this present life and the pomp thereof, come, I will make a handsume provision for you, and I will dismiss you with an honourablo dismission : but if ye seek God and his apostle, and the life to come, vorily God hath prepared for such of you as work righteousaess a great reward." "O wives of the prophet, ye are not as other women: if ye fear God, be not too complaisunt in speech, lest he should covet in whose heart is a discase of incontinence; but speak the speech which is convenient. And sit still in your houses; and set not out yoursclves with the ostentation of the former time of ignorance, and observe the appointed times of prayer, and give alms; and obey God and his apostle; for God desireth onty to remove from you the abomination of vanity, since ye are tho houschold of the prophet, and to purify you by a perfect purification."
The prophet interdicted to all his wives the privilege of marrying 2 gain after his death, and though some of them were then young, they scrupulously obeyed his command, delivered to them, like every thing else in the Koran, in the form of a mandate of heaven, and lived and died in widowhood. The passage in which this severe edict is found is a curiosity, and will doubtless lead the roader to suspect that it was prompted by a spirit of mean joalousy, the effects of which he aimed to porpetuate when he was no more. It is prefaced by some wholesome cautions to his followers respecting the etiquette to be observed in their intercourse with the prophet and his household.
"O true believers, enter not intogthe houses of thelprophet, unless it.
be permitted you to cat meat with hin, without waiting his convenient time; lint when yo ure invited, then enter. And when ye shall have eaten, disperse yourelves ; and stay not to enter into familiar discourse; for this incommodeth the prophet. He is ashamed to bid you depart, but Godis not ashamed of the truth. And when ye ask of the prophet's wives what ye may have occusion for, ask it of them behiad a curtain. Ihis will be more pure for your hearts and their hearts. Neither is it fit for you to give any unensiness to the apostle of Cind, ar mar. ry his wives after him for cier; for this would bo a grievous thing in the sight of God,"

In the outset of his carcer, Mohammed appeurs to have been more fa. vourably disposed towards the lews than the Christians. This is infer. ind from his enjoying with them a common descent from the patriarch Abrahan; from his agreement with them in the fundamental doctrine of the divine unity; and from lis proffering to make Jerusalem the point of pilgrimage and of the Kebla to his followers. But cenceiving a pique againet then about the tine of his entronco into Medina, he thenceforward became their inveterate enemy, and in all his wars pursued them with a more relentless severity than he showed towards any other people. Thus this descendant of Ishmael, without intending it, made good the declaration of holy writ respecting the antagomst seeds of Hagar and of Surah. "For it is written that Abraham hal two sons, the one by a bond-maid the other by a free woman. But he who was of the bond-wo. man was by promise. But as then he that was horn after the flesh persecuted him that was after the spirit, even so it is now." Their opposition to him can easily le uccounted for on the score of national and re. ligiotus prejudice. And the opprobrious name which they gave to the corrupt system of the heresiarch, tended still more to provoke his indig. nation. For while he professed to be a rostorer of the true primitive religion which God communicated to Abraham, and Abraham to his son Ishmacl, and which the prophet denominated Islam, or Islamism, from a word signifying to devote or dedicate to religion, the Jews, by a trans. position of letters, called the new creed Ismaclism, from the prophet's progenitor, and thus cast the greatest possible reproach on the bastard faith of their enemy. I'heir effrontery Mohammed neither forgot nor forgave. Still, both Jews and Christians were admitted to protection in ordinary cases on the payment of a specified tribute.
'Towards the C!ristians, though the Koran, and all who embrace it, breathe the most invetcrate malice and the most sovercign contempt against the "dogs" and "infidels" who profess the Gospel faith, yet rather more forbearance is excreised than towards the Jews; and somo of the Moslems will grant, that Christianity, next to their own, is the best religion in the world, particularly as held by Unitarians. Yet Mo. hammed, in the Koran, loses no opportunity to pour his revilings indis. criminately upon both. "Jews and the Christians say, We are the children of God and his beloved. Answer, Why, therefore, doth he punish you for your sins." "They say, Verily, none shall enter paradise, ex. cept they who are Jows or Cliristiams: this is their wish. Say, Produre
his convenient a ye shall have miliar discourse; bid you depart, ask of the proof them behiad a eir hearts. Neic of (ind, or mar. grievous thing in
ave been more fans. This is infer. from the patriarch imental doctrine of usalem the point of conceiving a pique dina, he thenceforwars pursued thom ls uny other people. it, made good the reeds of Hagar and , sons, the one by a was of the bond-wo. after the flesh perw." 'l'heir opposie of national and reich they gave to the so provoke his indif. of the truo primitive or Islamis to his son the Jews, by a trans. , from the prophel's roach on the bastard d neither forgot not itted to protection in e.
all who embrace it, sovereign contempt he Gospel faith, yet the Jews; and some $t$ to their own, is the Initarians. Yet Mo. (ir his revilings indissay, We are the chilcfore, doth he punish 11 enter paradise, eswish. Say, Produre
your proof of this, if ye speak truth. The Jows say, The Christians are grounded on nothing : yet they both read the Scriptures." "O ye, to whom the Scriptures have been given, why do yo dispute conceruing Abrahain? Abraliam was neither a Jew or a Christian; but he was of the true religion, one resigned unto (iod, and was not of the number of idolaters."
The religion of the Koran tolerates Chri tian churchen in places where they have been aceidently founded but permits them not be roared on new foundations. Christians may repair the walls and roofs of their places of worship, but are not allowed to lay a stonc in a new place consecrnted to the site of a holy building; nor, il fire or nny other accident should destroy the superstructure, are they suffored to renew the foundations, so as to orect another building. The consequence is, that Christian churches, in the Mohammed dominions, must necessarily at length sink to ruin, and vast numbers of them have already gone entirely to decay. In the great fires whirh happened in Galata and Constantinole in 1660, numerons Christiaa churches and chapels wero reduced to ashes, and when the piety and zeal of their votaries had re-edified and almost completed the greatest aumber of thom, a public order was issued that they should all be again demolished, it being judged contrary to Turkish law to permit the restoration of churehes where nothing but the mere foundation remained.

The fact may be here adverted to, in drawing our sketch to a close, that Mohammed not only admitted the Old and New Testaments as disincly inspired books, though corrupted by their disciples, but affirmed that they bore unequivocal prophetic tostimony to his future mission as prophet and apostle: "Aud when Jesus, the son of Mary, said, O children of Isriel, Verily I am the apostle of God sent unto you confirming the law which was delivered before me, and bringing good tidings of on apostle who shall come after me, and whose name shall be Alimed (Mohammed)." In support of what is here alleged, the Persian paraphrast quotes the words of Christ in his last address to his disciples : "If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I go away, I will send him unto you." This passage the Mohammedan doctors unanimously teach has a direct inference to their prophet, and is fulfilled in him ouly. But then, in order to make good their interpretation, they are obliged to hold thet the Christians in their copies have corrupted the true reading, which instead of Paraclete (Comforter), is Periclyte (illustrious, renowned), a word perfectly synonynous with Almed.
The following passage (Dcut. xxxiii. 2) is also suborned to the support of the same bad cause: "The Lord come from Sinai, and rose up from Mount Sier unto them; he shined forth from Mount Paran, and he came with ten thousand of his saints ; from his right hand went a fiery law for them." By these words, say the Moslem expositors, is set forth the delivery of the law to Moses, on Mount Sinai ; of the Gospel to Jesus at Jerusalem ; and of the Koran to Mohammed at Mecca. Br Seir, they maintain that the mountains of Terusalem are meant, and
by Paran, thoso in the neighbourhond of Mecen. But their geograploy will apiear as lame as their divinity, when it is stated, that Seir was n hundred mices distant from Jornsalem, and Paran five hundred from Moecn. Their other glosess of this sithere noed no confutation.

In another sense, bowever, wholiy inferent froms that intended by Mohamined or his followers, wo doubt his religion are distinctly forotold in the sacred volume. Tho religion promulgated, "and the empire established, by tise author of Islam, han been too signal a scourge to the Church and the civilised world not to be entitled to a place in the prophetic annunciations of the Bible. As the subject of the rise, progrens, and jermanence of Molammedanism cannot bo duly appreciated apart from the predictions concorning it, we have detormined to devote a portion of the Appendix to the consid. eration of the most prominent and striking of thase prophecies, to which the reader will permit us to bespeak his attention.
their geograply that Seir was a ve hundred from nfutation. that intended by and impoator and 20. Tho religion hor of Islam, han lised world not to of the Bible. As Moliammodanism ous concorning it, ndix to the consid. ophecics, to which

## APPENTEX.

## (A.)*

## PROPHECY.

(THE VISION.)
8. The he-goat waxed very great: and when he was atrong, the groat horu was broken; and for it came up four notable onee toward the four winda of heaven. 0 . And eit of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great toward the south and torvard the cast, and toward the pleasant land. 10. And it waxed great eren to the host of heaven; and it cant down sume of the liost and of the atars to the ground, and atamped upon thom. 11. Yea, he inagnified himselfeven to the Prince of the host, and by him was the daily ascrifion taken away, and tho place of his sancfuary was cast down. 12. And a host was given him againat tho daily alacrifice by reason of tranagression; and it cast down tho truth to the ground; aud it practised and prospered. 13. Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint alaid unto that certain saint which apake, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctisary and the host to betrodden under foot 1 14. And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then uball the sanctuary be cleansed.

## (THE INTERPRETATION.)

21. And the rough goat is the king (kingdom) of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king (kingdom). 22. Now that being broken, wherea four stood up for it, four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation, but in his power. 23. And in the latter timo of their kingdom, while the transgressors are come to ibe full, a king of fierce countonance, and undorstanding (Heb. making to underitand, teaching) dark sentences, shall stand up. W4.And his power shall bo mighty, wit not by his own power : and ho shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the lioly people. 25. And through his policy dsoho shall cause crn^ to proupor in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heant, and by peace ahall destroy many: he ahall also atnad up againat the Prince of ynnces; but he shall be broken without hand. 26. And the vision of the evening and the poming which was told is true; wherofore shut thou up the vision ; for it shall be for many deyy. Dan. vii. 8-26.

T'ue prophecy of Daniel contains a prospective view of the providenial history of the world, including the four great empires of antiquity, ogether with the powers which should suceeed them to the end of time, ad consummation of all things. It is reasonable therefore to expect, that system of predictions thus large upon the history of the world, would ot omit a revolution of such magnitude and prominence as that occasion-

- For the materials of this chapter, and occasionally for some portion of the lanage, the compiler acknowledgee himself indebted principally to Faber's Sacred Ilendar of Prophecy, Foster's Mahommetanism Unveiled, and Fry's Second Advent Christ. IIc has moreover given a minute and critical, attention to these prophera in the original lang!ages.
ed by Mohammed and Mohammedanism. No event, moreover, has had a more direct and powerful bearing upon the state of the Church than the establishment of this vast imposture; and as the preceding chapter contains a full and exact portraiture of the Papal tyranny which was to arise and prevail in the western portinn of Christendom, so the preseat is very generally admitted to contain a prediction of that great apostacy , which was destined to grow up and overwhelm the Church.in the East. 'The reasons of this opinion we now proceed to state.

The theatre of this prophecy is the Macedonian cmpire, founded by Alexander; from one of the four dismembered kingdoms of which the little horn of the vision was to epring up. In the vision, the prophet saw the first great horn of the he-goat, or the kingdom of Alexander, "bro. ken;" indicating that that kingdom was no longer to have a place as a kingdom in the eye of prophecy. The dominions of Alexander at his death were divided between four of his generals: Macedon and Greece in the west were assigned to Cassander; Thrace and Bithynia in the north to Lysimacus; Egypt in the south to Ptolemy; and Syria with the castern provinces to Seleuctas.

Ver. 9. And out of thera came forth a little horn.-A. "horn," in the symbolical language of prophecy, represents a civil or ecclesiastical kingdom. The little horn here mentioned was to come forth out of one of the four notable horns or members of the subdivided kingdom of $A$. lexander. The question has been much agitated whether Alexander seized and retained any portion of the Arabian peninsula: the fact of his having done so may be seen in any map of the Macedonian empire. "The empire of Alexander," observes M. Rollin, "was distributed into foar kingdoms; of which Ptolemy had Egypt, Lyjbia, Arabia, Calosyria, and Palestine." Ihe district occupied was indeed no more than an outskirt, but that outskirt comprised part of the province of Hejaz ; that is to say, part of that very district which gave birth to Mo. hammed and his religion. As the hora in the vision was a little one, so Mohammedanism in its first rise perfectly corresponded with the symbol. It originated with an obsrure inhabitant of a desert corner of Asia, whose earliest converts were his wife, his servants, his pupil, and his friend; and whose party at the end of three years soarcely num. bered a dozen persons.

Which waxcd cxcceding great toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land.-Mohammedanism necordingly, in is primitive course of conquest, did presently wax exceedingly great; and that in the very line marked out ioy the propheey. Its conquests extend ed sorthward over the peninsula of Arabia, over Egypt, and over a considerable portion of central Africa; eastward, over Persia, XSokhara, and Hindostan ; and northward, over Palestine, Asia Minor, Mesopoto tamin, Greece, and Tartary, the countries now forming the Turkish empire. "The pleasant land," er, literally, " the beauty," "the ornsment," is an appelation bestowed upon the land of Judah, from its being in a peculiar manner tho residence of the divine glory, the seat of worship, containing the city of Jerusalem and the temple, which were "3
crown of beanty and a diadem of glory:' to the mation of lisrael. The original word here employed is found in a parallel sence Ezek. xx. 5, 15; "a land flowing with milk and honey, which is tho glory of all lande." Jerusalent was captured by the Saracens A. D. 637, atter a siege of four months.

Ver. 10. And it waxed great even to the host of heaven.-TThe "hast of heaven" is but another name for the multitude of stars in the firmament. But stars, in the idiom of prophecy, aro a standing emblem of ecclesinstical officers. The word "host" accordingly is not only applied to the priests and Levites performing the service of the sanctuary (Num. iv 3.) but to the nation of Isracl as a great organized ecelesiastical body, or kingdom of priests. Ex. sii. 41. And when Christ says (Rev. i. 20), "the seven stars are the angels of the seven churches," his meaning undoubtedly is, that these stars are symbols of the spiritual rulers of the churches. The grand scope, therefore, of the present prophecy is, to point out a spiritual desolation, achieved by a hostile power suddeuly attaining great strength, and forcibly thrusting itself into tho bedy of true worshippers, with a view to their discomfiture and dispersiol.
And it cast doon some of the host, and (i. e. even) of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them.-As in the fign:ative language of prophecy the stars denote the spiritaul pastors of God's church, so the violent dejection of such stars from heaven to earth signifies a compulsory apostatizing from their religion. Mohanumedanism strikingly falfilled this prophecy from the date of its first promulgation, when it stood up agaiust the allegorical host, or the degenerate pastors of the Christian Church. Such of them as lay within the territories of the Grek empiro were especially givon into the hand of this persece'ting superstition; but by its inroads into Africa, and Spain, and Franee, and Italy, it waxed great aganst the whole host. Of the eastorn clergy, it cast some to the ground, or compelled them altogether to renounce the Christian faith. And as for those who still adhered to the form of their religion, it stamped them, as it were, under its feet with'all the tyranny of brutal fanaticism.

Ver. 11. Yca, he magnified himself eveu to the Prince of the host.lit the starry host be the pastors of the Church, the prince of that host must obviously be the Messiah. Mohanmedanism has most clearly rerified this prediction by magnifying its tounder to a pitch of dignity and honour equal to that of Christ. In fact, it has set up Mohammed above Christ. The Arabian impostor allowed Jesus to be a prophet; but he maintained that he himself was a greater prophet, and that the Koran was destined to supersede the Gospel. Thus did Mohammedanism mugnify itself "even to" the Prince of the host.
And by him the daily sacrifice was taken avay, and the place of his sanctuary was cut down.-The term rendered "daily sacrifice,""or, literally, "the daily," "the continual," is a term frequently used respecting the daily ropeated sacrifices of the Jowish temple, typifying the death of Christ till he should come. Now, what this continual burnt-
offering was with respect to Christ's first coming, are the danly utterimg of prayer and praisc, "and all the solemnities of the Christian Churcli, as administered by a divinely appointed order of men. When, therefore, tho Saracens and Turks by their victories and oppressions broke up and dispersed the churches of the East, and abolished the daily spiritual worship of God, then did the "little horn" take away the "continual offering" established by the Prince of tho host. But the predicted desolation was to extend yet farther. The place of Ged's sanctuary was to be razed to its fomudation, and both the sanctuary and the host for a long course of ages to be trodden under foot. Accordingly, Mo. hammedanism began this appointed work by the subversion of the Christian churches and altars in every stage of its progress against the Greok empire; and has continucd the desolation during nearly twelve hundred years, until it has all but completed the extinction of Eastern Christianity. Gibbon observes, that upon the taking of Jerusalem, "by the command of Omar, the ground of the temple of Solomon was proparod for the foundation of a mosque." And it is worthy of notice, that whereas the original word used by Daniel for "sanctuary" is Kodsh, the same historian remarks, that the epithet Al Kods is used now, and was then among the Arabs as the proper appellation of the Holy City, of which the sanctuary or temple was the distinguishing ornament and glory.

Ver. 12. And an host was given him against the daily saerifice by reason of transgression: and it cast down the truth to the grouatd: and practised and prospered.-From this it would appear, that power was to be given to the little horn, not merely for the subversion of the true religion, but also for the permanent substitution of another faith. "Host," we may naturally suppose, means in this 'place the same as when it was used in a former verse.-" a host of stirs," symbolical of the several orders of Christian pastors and ministers. "An host," then, to be given to the little horn, implies that he too should have his orders of teachers, and a regular system of religious worship, and that by means of this new and spurious ecelesiastical polity, the Christian ministry should be opposed and superseded, and, "the truth cast to the ground." The prediction, 'thus interpreted, aecording to the natural force of the language and construction, is applicable to no other known power ; but as applied to the heresy of Mohammed, its fulfilment ap. pears perfect. For the religion of Islam permanently overthrew the Christian priesthood and altars, by the permanent erection of other altars and of another priesthood in their room. Every where throughout its vast domains the mosques replaced tho Chastian temples; and the Imams and the nuezzin were substituted for the appointed ministry of Christ. In a more cularged view, the Saracens and 'Turks themselves composed the antagonist host or priesthood. For in Mohammedanism, the sword being the grand engine of conversion, the whole Mussulman people became virtually a priesthood; and each individual Saracen and Türlish soldier a missionary and maker of proselytes.
e datly utiermas ristian Church,
When, therepressions broke d the daily spiraway the "conBut the predictGod's sanctuary ary and the host ccordingly, Mosion of the Chrisagainst the Greok ly twelve hundred Eastem Christirusalem, "by the mon was proparod of notice, that $s$ is used now, of the Holy City, hing ornament and
e daily sacrifice by to the grouzid: and ar, that power was oversion of the true 'place the same tirs," symbelial as s. "An host," then, puld have his orders orship, and that by $y$, the Christian min. The truth cast to the rding to the natural to no other known , its fulfilment ap. erec overthres the erection of other alan tere throughout ppoinples; and the d Turks ministry of in Mohammederism the whole Mussulnan lividual Saracen and tes.

Ver. 23. And in the latter time of their king dom, when the transgressors are come to the fill, a king of fierce countenance and understanding (teaching) dark sentencee, shall stand up. We are here furnished with a chronological clew to the period of the commencement of this disastrous power.-The first threo empires, forming a part of the symbolic image which appeared in vision to Ncbuchadnezzar, were in* deed stripped of their dominions by the conquests of tho fourth, or Roman empire ; but still, in the view of prophecy, their lives are considered as being nevertheless prolonged ; Dan. vii. 12. Hence it is an indisputable fact that the little horn of Mohanmedanism rose up in the latter time of the Greek empire.-Ancther striking note of the time of the rise of this power is contained in the words, "When the transgressore are come to the fill," or, "when the apostacy shall be completed:" By tho transgressors or apostates here mentioned, we must understand the corrupt Christian Church, with its degonerate pastors, the smitten ecelesiastical stars, spoken of in a former verse. Wo learn both from the civil and sacred history of the time when Mohammed arose, that tho Christian Church had then arrived at the height of those corruptions in loctrine and practice, which had been so clearly foretold by the Apostle Paul in his prediction of the Man of Sin. Tho extraordinary success of the Mohammedan imposture was permitted as a punishment of this great defection. Tho allegorical host, by reason of their apostacy from the truth, were subjected to the tyranny of the little horn. But this apostacy, which had long previously infected both the East and the West, wias comploted, or had reached its acme, about the commencernent of the seventh century, when the prophet of Islam first appeared. Gibbon, the historian, introduces his account of Mohammedaniam by observing, that "the Cliristians of the seventh century had insensibly relapsed into a serblance of paganism," From this time, therefore, the atars were givon into the hand of the little horn, as the appointed rod of God's anger: they were penally consigned to its tyranny by reason of their prerious apostacy into the idolatrous superstitions of the Gentiles. Again, as far as the aspect of Mohammedanism is concerned, that wonderful ecclesiastical domination may well be described as a "kingdon of fierce countenance," when the avowed maxim: of its founder was to employ the sword as the grand engine of converstion. Of this ferocious spirit its prosclytes have in all ages largely partaken. Some, however, suppose the words should be translated "of a firm countenance," denoting the bold effrontery of the barefaced, impudent liger ; and such were Mohammed and his successor : their r ligion is, in truth, the most glaring imposition that was over palıned upon the credulity of mankind. - As to the remaining character of this desolating power-that he should "understand dark sentences"-the expression, "dark sentences," is equivalent to the familiar scriptural phrases, "dark sayings," and "dark sayongs of old." Theso pbrases, in the language of the sacred writers, will le found uniformly to convey a spiritual signification. Thus the Paalmist, "I will open my mouth in a parable; I will utter dark sayinge of old." It seems prohable, therefore. Hat the equivalent expression,
"d dark sentences," relates, in one shape or other, to religion; and the "understanding dark sentences," to real or pretonded skill in the interpretation of things spiritual. The Koran, so"celebrated in the Mo. hammedan religion, the book containing their spiritual mysteries, exactly answers to this description. And it is not a little remarkable, that the author of the Koran should have been uneonsciously led to uppropriate the language of this very prediction to himself: "O Lord, thon hast given me part of the kingdom, and hast taught me tho interpretation of dark sayinge." "We taught him the interpretation of dark sa?. ings, but the greater part of them inen do not understand." "I'his is it secret history which we reveal unto thee, O Mohammed.: As the fibricator, therefore, of the Koran, Mohammed has himself confirmed his elaim to the prophetie distinction of "understanding dark sentences;" for it is the declared object ol this pretended revelation to revive the traditions of anciont times concorning (ind and religion; and it professes farther to unfold tim history of futurity, and the secrets of ine in. visible world.

Ver. 24. And his porocr shall be mighiy, but not by his ouen porecr.Of this language a twofold interpretation may be suggested, either of which is satisfactory, though it be not easy to decide which of them is the true one. By "his power being mighty, but not by his nwn power," may be meant, that the emporal power of Mohummed and bis succes sors was to owe its grcutness and perpetuity to his spiritual domiaion: or, in other words, tirat the empire which he foumded was to be uphed by the imposture which he established. To this purpose the followin: passage from Demetrius Cantemir, the historian of the Ottoman empire, will be found very striking. "The Turlss," says he, "ascribed the fortunate successes of the enipirc, not ao much to human prudence, policy, and valour, as that their first cupperors waged war, int through am. bition and a desire of dominion, hut through tho zeal of propagating the Mohammedan religion; and by that means they procured the divine a. sistence to their undertakings." The temporal power of Mohamedanism, accordingly, has repeatedly risen and declined; tho Moham medan world bas again and ngain changed masters, but its spiritualt ranny has subsisted in undiminished vigour; it has lives and reigne unaltered, through the whole of its period thus far fulfilled. It is mightr therefore, by the power of the host piven unto it. Aecording to anothe: interpretation, the passage may he simply designed to teach, that the re markahle success of the Mohammedan power is to be referred directi to the special providence of (ind), that the results attained were snei tirely to transcend all that could be anticipated from the ordinary oper ation of human causes, that the hand of Gorl was to be clearly recos nised in every stage of its progress. Viewed in this light, the langumg of the Most High respecting Nebuchadnezzar may afiord a comnenta yy of most striking pertinency upon this prediction: "O Assyrian, the rod oi mine anger, and the staff in their hand is mine indignation. will sead him against an hypr al nation, and against the peoplea me wrath will I give bim a charso oo take spoil, and to take the prey
orcligion; and the ded skill in the inichrated in the Mo. al mysteries, exacte remarkable, that iously led to uppro. ii. "O Lord, thon it me the interpretaretation of dark sas stand." "'1his is it mmed:" 18 the fais himself confirmed andiug dark senten. 1 revelation to reviso religion; and it pror the secrets of the in.
by his oucn porocr.; siggested, either of cide which of them is ot by his owl power," nmed and his succe a spiritual dominion: ded was to be uphed purpose the followin, if the Ottoman empire, ys he, "ascribed the human pridence, pol. ? war, not through an. eal of propagating the rocured the divine an poiser of Mohamine. declined ; tho Mohall: ers, but its spiritual it. has lived and reigne fulfilled. It is mightst, Aecording to anothe: ed to teach, that tho to he referred directie ts attained were sne from the ordinary oper as to be clearly recon. this light, the langurat ny affiod a commenta on: "O Assyrian, th s mine indignation. d against the people and to take low prem
and to tread them down like the mire of the streets. Howbeit, he meanc:lh not so, neither doth his heart think so; but it is in his heart to destros and cut off nations not a few. For he saith, by the wisdom; for I an proulent. Shall the ax boast itself against him that heweth therewith? or shall the saw mangnify itself against him that shakoth it? as if the rod should shake ifself ngai:st them that lift it up, or as if the staff should tift it up iteelf as if it were no wood."
And he shall Ilestroy wonderfully, and shall prosper and practise, and shall destroy trie mighty and the holy people.-It should be borne in mind that the verses we are now considering contain the angel's interpretation of the symbolic actions performed by the little horn in the vision. Of 'hese the principal was his rudely invading the emblematic "host," or the hierarehy, violently casting them to the ground, and stamping upon them with his feet. The language before us is unquestionably exegetical of this figurative scenriry, and the phrases, "shall destroy wonderfuily," and "shall deatroy the mighty and the holy people," are equivalent to saying, he shall succeed to a surprising degreo in causing multitudes to npostatize from the Christian protession. I'his was to be done by spreading the pnison of a false religion. For the oriminal word rendered "destroy" is a term implying not merely physical destruction, but moral corription, or the vitiating influence of false doctrmes and principlos upon human conduct. It is the term employed in the following passages :-" For all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth;" "Tuke ye thereiore good heed unto yourselves, lest ye corrupt yourselves, nad make you a graven image, \&c.;" "They aro corrupt; they have done nhominable worke." In allusion to these expressions, it is said in the annmaciation of divine judgmente in the Apocalypse, "Thy wrath is come, that thon shouldst destroy them that destrey the earth ;" i. e. those that corrupt the earth. In affixing this sense to the destruction to be achieved by the little horn, or tho Nohammedan jower, it is noi necessary to exchude the idea of the bloodshed and desolution which have marked tho progrese of the Saracen and Turkish arms in planting and defending their dominion. Yet we think tho sense of a moral depravation, brought about by the introduction of a spurious and pestilent faith, and accomplishing a sad defection among the professors of the true religion, answers better to the nature of the symbol cmpiojed, and is equally accordant with the truth of history:
Ver. 25. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hund: and he shall magnify himself in his heort, and peace shall destroy many: te shall also stand up against the Prince of princes.- The institution of the religion of the Koran with its "hosts," orders of teachers, and its systern of worship, was Mohammed's masterpiece of "policy." It was by this means that his foilowers supplanted the preachers of the Gospel, and converted to the faith multitudes of those over whom the temporal authority had been exteuded by the power of the sword. "Policy" here is probably to be understood in the sense of unprincipled shrewdmess, the working of a keen but depraved intellect, laying its plans with a serpentine subtiety, and executing them with an entire recklessness of
the moral character of the means employed. In this manner success has crowned the Mohammedan power; their vile arts, their "craf," their perfidy, have strangely prospered. No more atriking charactistic of the founder or the followers of Islam could be designated. "In the exercise of the political government," says Gibbon, "Mohammed was compelled to abate the stern rigour of fanaticism, to comply in onme measure with projudices and passions of his followers, and to employ even the vices of mankind as the insticument of their salvation. The use of fraud and perfidy, of cruelty and injustice, was often subservient to the propagation of the fnith." "In the support of truth, the arts of fraud and fiction may be decmed less criminal; and he would have startod at tho foulness of the means, had he not been satisfied of the im. portance and justice of the erd." The recent Travels in the East of Mr. Madden, ar jinglish gentleman, furnish some very graphic sketches of Mohammesian character, which may be adduced to fill up the prophetic portraiture we are now considering. "His (the Turk's) inherent hostility io Christianity is the first princuple of his law ; and the perfidy it is supposed to enjoin is the most prominent feature in his character." "The most striking qualities of the Moslem are his profound ig. norance, his insuperable arrogance, his habitual indolence, and the perfidy which directs his policy in the divan, and regulates his ferocity in the field." "As to the outward man, the Turk is, physically speaking, the finest animal, and, indeed, excels all Europeans in bodily vigour as well as beanty. As to their moral qualities, I found them charitable to the poor, attentive to the sick, and kind to their domestics; but I also found them perfidious to their friends, treacherous to their encmies, and thankless to their bencfactors." "I never found a Turk who kept his word when it was his interest to brenk it."
As to the expression, "by peace he shall destroy many," it has been interpreted by some as implying, that the kingdom represented by the little horn should destroy many by wasting invasions while their victima were slumbering in a state of negligent security; a peculiarity said to hare been exempified in the whole progress of the Saracen arms. Such may hare been the case; but wo incline to attribute another import to the words, Adhering to the ser.se before given to the word "destroy," as implying the same ns to corrupt, seduce, lead into destructive error, wo suppose the allusion to be the fuct, that thousands during the victorious progress of the Moslem arms accepted of life, safety, and "peace," on condition of their embracing the foul imposture of the conquerors. Thus it was that "by peace he destroyed many;" i. e. he corrupted them by the terms on which he granted peace. It is notorious that these were "death, tribute, or the Koran;' and where the subject nations escaped the point of the swoal, they were destroyed by the corrupting and deadly influence of the superstition wheh they embraced.

Int he shall be bwken without hand.-That is to say, not by luman, hatids, or by the instrumentality of man, as empire are usually overthrown; but this spiritual dominion is to meet its fate when the stomectit
manner success ts, their "eraff," riking charactistic iguated. "In the "Mohammed was to comply in nome ess, and to employ sir salvation. The so often subservient If truth, the arts oi and he would have 2 satisfied of the im. avels in the East of ery graphic sketches d to fill up the pro. (the Turk'c) inheris law; and the per eaturo in his charae are his profound it. lolence, and the per. ulates his ferocity in physically speaking, is in bodily vigour as ad them charitable to tomestics ; but I also to their encmies, and $\mu$ Turk who kept his
y many," it has been m represented by the ns while their victime peculiarity said to hare n arms.Such may hare import to the words, troy," as implying the error, we supposo the ictorious progress of acc," on condition ol re. Thus it was tha them by the terms on wers "deati, tribute, aped the point of the od deadly influence ol
to say, not by liuman, ire are usually overate when the sinne cut
"without hands" is dashed agninst the innage, nud reluces all the power of depotism and delusion th the dust. Exporitors of prophecy are mataj of them confident in the hello that he Niv.. unmenamporture wilt begin to be broken, withouthad. al the time when the great antichristian confederacy of the Roman beast is destroyed; and at the epoch when the Milleunium is ou the point of combenarila. At this period the Gospel begin to be successfully preached throughout the wholo world; and the issue, it is supposed, will he the universal gathering of the Gentiles into the pale of the Christian Church. During this period, the Mohammedans will be converted to the true faith; and when their conversion shall have become genernl, the spiritual kingdom of the Eastera little horn will no doubt be broken. But in that case, it will phainIy have been broken by the sword of violence, in the hand of an carthly congueror; but by the invisible agency of the Holy Spirit, inclining the liearts of its long deluded votaries to renounce their errors, and to embrace the faith of the true Prophet of God.
Thus we have scen, that the little horn of the symbolical he-goat answers in every importiant purticular, however, circumstantial, which has hitherto been accomplisted, to the successful imposture of Mohamme(d. The result, therefore, of the wholo inquiry must be, that by the little horn, described in this chapter of Daniel, is symbolized the spiritual kingdom of Mohammedunisur.
Another paralle: prophecy in now to be traced in Apocalypse of John, who has confirmed and illustrated the most important predictions of Daniel.

## REVELATION, CH. IX. 1-10.

1. Aod the fifil angel sounded, and I saw $n$ star fall from heaven unto the carth : and to him wasgiven the key of the bottomless pit. 2. And lic opened the botto nless iif; and there arose a smoke out of tha pit, as the amoke of a great furnace; and the fon and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of tie pit. 3. And there come out of the smoke locirsts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. 4. And it was commanded thom that they bould not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neithor any tree; but Hing those men which have nut the seal of God in their forchoads. 5. And to thom it ras given that they should not kill them, but that they should he tormented five ponths: and their tormont was as the torment of a scorpion, when hestriketh a man. . And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to lie, and death shall flee from them. 7. And the shapes of the lucusts were like unto cries prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it wore crowns, like gold, ond their faces were as the faces of men. 8. And they had hair as the hair of women, od their teeth were as the tecth of hows. 9. And they had breastplates, as it were reasiplates ofiron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of pony horses, rumning to battle. 10. Aod they had tails like unto scorpions; and ere were stings in their tait, : and their power was tol:urt men five months. 11. And pey had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit; whose name, in e Hebrew tongne, is Abaddon; but in the Greek totigue hath his name Apollyon. 2. One wo is past; and behold thare cama iwo more woes hereafter. 13. And the rita angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which hefore God; saying to the sixth angel, which had the trumpet, loose the four angels hich are bound in the river Euphrates. And the four angels wera lonsed which ere prepared for an hour and a day, and a month and a year, for to slay the third part men. 16. And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand:
and I heardthemumber of hom. 17. And hus I saw the hurses in the viston, and them that eat on them, having breastplates of tire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses were ns the head of lions; and out of their mouth issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone. 18. Jy these three was the third part of men killed; by the fire, and by tho smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their inouths. 13. For their power is in their innuth, and in their tails : for their tails were like untu berpents, and had heads, and with thein they do hurt.
"In the prediction of Danicl," observes Mr. Fuber, "Mohammedanism alone is spoken of : its two principal supporters, tho Saracens and the Turks, are not the superstition from its commencement to its termination is given, without descending to particularize the nations by which it should be successively patronised. In the Revelation of Joln, this deficiency is supplied; and we are furmshed with two distinct and accurate paintings, both of the Saraceuic locusts under their extorminating leader, and of the Euphatean horsemen of the four 'Iurkish Sultanics." Those two departments of the prophecy we shall now endeavou. to c.s. plain in their minute particulars.

Vcr. 1. And I sav a star fall (Gr. "having tallen") from haran unto the carth; and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit, and there arose a smoke out the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace: and the sun and the air woere darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.-Commentators at the present day are alnost universally agreed in rogarding tho fifth trumpet as symbolizing and predicting the appearance of the Arabian impostor, his spurious religion, and his Saracan followers. But, as it is by no means evident, how Mohammed himself can properly be represented as "a star falling from heaven," the usual symbol of an apostate Cluristian teacher, or of the Holy Spirit in this imagery to be, to teach us, that Mohammedanism is to be considered as the fruit or product of a Christian heresy. 'The star had fallen before the time of tho false prophet, i: the person of Arius, and other gross he. retics; und as the consequence of their apostacy from the truth, the providence of God so ordered it. that the desolating delusion of Mohammedanism should arise and oreaspread some of the fairest portions of the Church. 'This view of the arch-imposture of Islamism has been taken by some very able writers of modern times; particularly by Mh. Whitaker in his "Origin of Arianism." The agrand heresies, therefore, of the Christian Church, previous to the time of Mohammed, seemto be here personified in the fallen star, und represented as being instrumel. tal in introducing this master-plague of crror and superstition into the world. The poetical machinery of the vision is supposed to be taken from the sacred oracular caves of the ancient Pagans, which were often thought to communicate with the sea, or the great abyss, and which were especially valued, when (like that at Delphi) they emitted an intoxicating vapour; it is used, therefore, with singular propricty is foretelling the rise of a religious imposturc. There may possibly be ad allusion also to the cave of Hera, whither the prophet was wont to retirl for the purpose of excogitating his system, and from which it really ems nated. The opening of the bottomless pit, therefore, and letting olf hheir moult issued ppart of mien killell; out of their thouths.
tails were like unte
"Mohanumedarthe Saracens and ment to its termi. s nations by which xion of John, this distinct and accuheir extorminating w endeavou, to ex.
len") from hcarca
bott a grceis pit, and of the smole of the niversully agreed iu edicting the appeara, and lis Saracen Mohammed himself n heaven," the usual is to be considered us tar had fallen before ; and other gross he from the truth, the
ing oi the delusion of M of Is fairest portions ; particularl d heresics, therefore Mohammed, seemto d as being instrumen. superstition into the supposed to be taker ans, which were often eat abyss, and which iii) they cmitted ai re ingular propriety re may possibly be a m which it reall emb cfore, and letting ol
 hed and diabolical system of religion, the donse and nowious fumes of the corru,t theolagy which ho broached, and by means of which so large a protion of Cllaristendom was finally ubscured and involved in dirkness. The preternatural darkening of the sun foreshows the eclipso of the true religinn; and that of the air prefigures the uncontrolled domiuion of the powers ni darkness. As a striking coineidence with tho sigus here predicted, it is worthy of note. that n remarkable comet inmediately preceded the birth of Molammed; and that an eelipse of the sun, of extraordinary degree nud duration, attended the first announcement of his pretended mission.
Ver. 2. And there canc out of the pit locists upon the carth.-A rabla has lung been noted for giving birth to prodigious swarms of locusts, which ofien overspread and lay wasto the neighbouring countrics; and it is remarkable, that in a genuine Arabian romance, the locust is introduced as the national emblem of the Ishmaelites. The symbel, therefore, of the locusts issuing out of the emoke strikingly represents the armies of the Saracens, the martial followers of the prophet : first engendered, as it were, amid the fumes of his religion, and then marching forth, at his command, to conquer and to proselyte the world. Thepages of history must be consulted to learn the devastations of those destructive Saracens, which, under the guidance of Mohammed and his successors, alighted upon and wasted the npocalyptic earth. Yet, notwithstanding the phantasins that cume forth from the pit of the abyss bore a general resemblance to locusts, they were marked ly several peculiarities, by which they were more perfectly adapted to typify the people designed to be thus shadowed out. These we shall consider as we proceed.
Ver. 4 And it toas commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the urth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the name of God in their foreheads.-By the command that they should not hurt the grass, nor the trees, but men, only, it is cvident that theso were not natural, but symbolical locusts; and also that they were under providential control. The same thing nppears from attributes assigned them, which plainly belong to the objects signified, and not to the sign; as the human fice, the woman's hair, the golden crowns, the ron breastplates. But it is very common in the symbolic diction of prophecy, to find the literal and the aliegorical sense intermixed, and that fren in the same passuge. We are thus furnished with a clew to the ceal meaning of the symbols. By the precept hero given the emblemaic locusts were required to act in a manner perfectly dissimilar to the arages of natural locusts: and yet how faithfully the command was beyed, may be inferred from the following very remarkable injunction rthe Caliph Abubeker to Yezid, upon setting out on the expedition apainst Syria, the first undertaking of the Saracens in the way of foreign fonquest. It can scarcely be doubted, that these instructions have been roservad, under the providence of God, for the express purpose of furishhing an illustration of this prophetic text. "Remember," said Abueker, "that you are always in the presence of God, on the verge of
death, in the assamance of judgment, and the hope of paradises. Wh yon fight the battess of the Lort, acquit yourselves like men, witho turning your backs; but let not your victory be staned with the blo of women or children. Destroy no palni-trees, nor burn any fields corn. Cut down no frnit-trees ; nor do any mischief to cattle, only su as you kill to eat. When you make any covenant, stand to it, and as good as your word. As you go on, you will find some religious po sons, who live retired in monasteries, and propose to thenselves to ser God that way: let them alone, and neither kill them, noe destroy the monasteries. And you will find another sort of people, that bolong the synagogue of Satan, who have shaven erowns: be sure you clea their skull, and give them no quarter till they eithor turn Mahometan or pay tribute." It has accordingly been noticed, that those parts of 1 Roman empire which were left intouched by these Saracen horde were those in which it appears from history the remnant of the tr church of God was still found residing: they wero only to hurt the me who had the mark of God on their forehcad.

Ver. 5. Ind to then it was given that they should not kill them, but th they should be tormented five months: and their toment was the torment of scorpion, whea he striketh a man-Mr. Gibbon's undesigned commentar on these words will show how the commission was fulfilled. "The ta option of friendship or submission, a battle was proposed to the enemic of Mahomet. If they professed the ereed of Islam, they were admitte to all the temporal and spiritual benefits of his primitivo disciples, an marched under the same banners, to extend the religion they had on braced. The clemency of the prophet was decided by his interests yet he seldom trampled on a prostrate enemy, and ho seemed to pron ise, that on the payment of a tribute, the least guilty of his unhelievin subjects might bo indulged in their worship.-The period assigned fo the power of the locusts, in this prediction, is "five montiss." Prd phecy has its peculine mode of computing time. A day for the mo. part stands for a year. Five months, therefore, of thirty days each, mount, in the computation of prophecy, to one hundred and fifty year As five liternl months is the utmost term of the duration of the natur plague of the locusts, so the prophetic five months acemrately denote the period of the main conquests of the Saracen empire, computing frol the appearance of Mohammed to the foundation of Bagdad. "Read. says Bishop Newton, "the history of the Saracens, and you will fin that their greatest exploits were performed, and their greatest eonques made, within the space of five prophetic months, or one hundred an fifty years,--between the year 612, when Mehomet opened the botton less pit, and began publicly to teach and propagate iis imposture; ar the year 762, when Almansor built Bagdad, and called it the city peace." The comparison of the locusts' torments to that of the sco pion will be considered subsequently.

Ver. 6. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it ; a sball desirc to die, but death shall flec from them.-This prediction has us ally been considered as awfully expressive of the hopeless sufferin
and despair of Liastern Christemdom, under the lawless insults, violences, and oppressions systematically pructised by their Saracen masters. We would not deny that this may have been alluded to ; yet, as it would seem that men desirous of escaping sutfiering by death, might easily, in a thousand ways, have accomplishod their object, it may be suggested, whether the Sararens themselves are not the persons hero referred to, as coveting death in battle, fiom a view to the honour, and the rewards of such a decense. The tollowing passage from the Koran, is worthy of special note in this commexion. "Moreover, ye did sometimes wish for death, before that ye met it." Oll these worils Salo remarks, in a note, "that several of Mohammed's followers, who were not present at Beder, wished for an opportunity of obtaining, in unother action, the iike honour as those had gained who fell martyrs in that event." The import of the language, therefore, may be, that Gol should give to the Mostem hosts such an uninterrupted tide of conqueste, they should so uniformly come off victorious in their engagements, and that with such iaconsiderable losses, that numbers, in the height of their enthusiasm, should pant in vain for the ghat aous privilege of dying in the field of battle.
Ver. 7. And the shapes of "ols vere like wito horses prepared unto lattle.-"Arabia," says (iiblum in the opinion of naturalists, the native country of the loorse." whorsemmship of the Arabs has ovabeen an object of admiration. "Ihe martinl youth, under the bauner of tho Emir, is ever on horseback and in the field, to practise the exercise of the bow, the javelin, and the scimitar." In correspondace, therefore, with the hieroglyphic of the prophet, the strength of the Saracens consisted very much in their numerous cavalry, and the unriralled speed of the Aribian coursers forms the most striking possible emblem of the rapid carcer of the saracen armies.
And on their heads werc as it were crowns like gold, and their faces wereas thefaces of men.-" Make a point," says a precept of Mohammed, "ot wearing turbans; because it is the way ol angels." Tho turban, accordingly, has ever been the distinctive headdress of the Arabs, and their boast has been, that they wore, as their common attire, those ornaments, which among other people are the peculiar badges of royalty. The notice of the "faces of" men" seems to be intended merely to afford aclow to the meaning of the emblem; to intimate, that not natural locusts, but human heings, were depicted under this symbol.
Vir. 8. And they had hair;' as the hair of women, and their teeth were as he teeth of lions.-'The Arubs, as Pliny testifies, wore their beards or raher mustachios, as men, while their hair, like that of women, was flowng or plaited. 'Tho "teeth like those of lions," has reference to the reapons and implements of war; and the "breastplates of iron" to the rnour made use of by the Saracen troops in their expeditions. The -sound of their wings as the sound of chariots of many horsen running o battle," is but a part of the same expressive imagery denoting warke scenes and preparations.


## IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)


lerr. 10. And they hasd tails like anto scorpions: and there wacre ciings it their tails.--The interpretation of the symbols of the Apocalypse must be sought for in the Old T'estament From the following words of Isaiah (ch. ix. 14, 15) it appears that the tail of a beast denotes the false doctrines or the superstition which be maintains:--" Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel heal and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the proplet that teach. eth lies, he is the tail." 'i'he emblem, therefore, striking!y represents the infliction of spiritual wounds ly the propagation of poisonons and deadly errors and heresies. And nothing is more evident from the pagn of history than that the Monlem followers of Mohammed have seatterel. like scorpions, the veno:n of their doetrines behind them; and whether: conquering or conquered, have succected in palming a new creed upor those with whom they have had to dor. By this symbol, then, we ap plainly taught, that the plague of the allegorical locusts consisted un: only in the ravages of war, but in the succeesfial propagation of a false religion, of which the doctrines shonld bo as deleterous in a spiritual point of view, as the sting of a scorpion in a natural. In like mannei, when it is said (ch. xii. 3, 4) of the "grent red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, that his tail drew the thizal part of the stars of heasen, and did cast them to the earth," the explication, is, thet tho Autichristian power shadowed ont by this furnidable monster shomill he permited to instil the most pernicious errors into the minds of the profess. ed ministers of the truth, and thus bring about their entire defection from Christinnits.

Ver. 11. And they hod a kins mer thein, whirh is the argrel of the hottom leas pil, whose name in the Hibrew tongue is Aluddon, but in the Circeli tongw hutio his name apolyon.--Both these terms sipnily destroper. Singe the locusts are at once secular congutrors and the propagators of a fale religion, their king must stand to them in the double relation of a temporal and spiritual head. Such accordingly were Mohmamed and the Caliphs his successors, who mist be viewed as jointly constituting the the locusi-king Abaddon; for in the usinal hanguge of propheeg, a hing denotes, not any single individul, but a dynasty or kingdom. 'ilw chief of the locusts, when they first issued thom the pit of the abyse, wa Mohammed himself; but during the allotted period of the wo whin they occasioned, the reiguing destroyer was, ot course, the reigulat Caliph. If, therefore, we were to suppose the fenius of Mohamosdanism under the Caliphs to bo personified, and this symbolical persor. age to be designated by the most apropriate tille, Abaddon, the destrey er, would be the appellation.

As the portion of the propbecy thas far considered has reference the origin of Mohammed's imposture, and to the rise, progress, and conquests of the Saracens, its earliest ahettors and propagators, so lit remaining part announces the commencement and career of the Thrks power, the principal of its later supporters.

Ver. 13. And the sixth angol sounded, and I hrard a voice from the for horns of the golden altar, whith is before Cood, saying to the sirth angel who
al there were stings i. he Apocalypse inust lowing words of Isaast denotes the false $13:-$ - Therefore the and rush, in one day. he proplet that tach. strikingty represents on of poisonons and evident from the page mmed have seattered. d them ; and whetien ing a new creed upon symbol, then, we are locusts consisted m? propagation of a fabse sleterous in a spiritua! ural. In like mannet, crigon having sevea art of the stars of henmonster thet the Autite minds of the profees t their entire defection
is the angerl of the lootum n. but in the Girec!: tongw ity destroper. Sine the e propagators of a fabe puble relation of a tem. ere Mohnamed and the f jointly co:stituting the bage of prophesy, a king the or kitiglom, 'lim period of the ahyss, wa of cours the wo whir he gearse, the reiguin 1 this syumboli e, Abaddon, tho person
-idered has reference: the rise, progress, ant and propagators, sot and career of the 'Turki
rard a voice from the for ing. to the sirth anctl whi
is depicting the visionary scene of a fielin of buthe, it which the cavalry In the trumpet, Loose the four augels resincil ars bo:nd in (rather a', by, in the vicinity of ) the great river Eurbates, and the four angels were lonech.-It in mpossible, from the train of events, and from the purter of the world in which we are directed to look for the irruption of these prodigions inultituies of horsemen, to mistake to whom the prophecy reters. 'Ihe four angels who are deseribed as bound in the regions bordoring oa the river Euphrates, not in the river itselt, are the four contemporary sultanies or dynasties, into which the empiro of the Soljukian 'Iurks was thivided towards the clase of the eleventh centiry: Persia, Kermay, Syma, and Rıoun. 'Ihese sultanies, from different causes, were long restrained from extending their conquests beyond what uny be gengraphically termed the Euphratean reginns, but towards the close of the thirteenth century, the four angels on the river Euprites were loosed in the persons of their existing representatives, the mited Ottoman and Selyakian 'Torks. 'The historian of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire must of necessity be the guide to any English commentator on this part of the propinetic history. 'I he following is his testimony as to the immense number of the 'I'urkish cavalry. "As the subject nations eharmed under the standard of th: 'l'urks, their cavalry, both men and harses, were proudly computed by mullions." "On this occasinn, the b:yrinds of the 'Jurkish horse overspread a frontice of six hundred miles, from 'Taurus to Erzeroum."

Ver. 17. And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and those that sat on then, having breastplates of fire and if jucinth, and brinstone.--'X'iese prophetic characteristics of the Euphratean wariors accord in the most perfect manner with the description which history gives of the T'urks. They brought immense armies in the field, chiefly composed of horse, and from their first appearance on the great political stage of nations tieir costume has been pecularly distinguished by the colours of scarlet, blue, and yeilow, which are here denoted by the terms "fire," " jacinth," and "brimstone." Rycaut's " Proseat State of the Ottoman Enpire," pubhshed towards the close of the seventeenth century, will satisfy the reader on this point.
And the heads of the horses were as the heuds of lions, and ont of their mouths issued fire and smoke und brimstune. We have here a nymbol which is not elsewhere to be met wih in the Seriptures. The prophetic horses. are represented as vamiting fut aftheir mouths "fire, atal smoke, and brimstone," by which it is added, "the third part of men was killed."Merle, Newton, Faher, and most other eminment expositors of the Reve clation, agree in supposing that the flashes of tire attended by smoke and brimstone, which scemed to proseed from the nouths of the horses, were in reality 'the flashes of artiliery.' 'The 'f'urks were among the first who turned to account the Europlean invention of gunpowder in carrying on their wars. Camon, the most deadly engine of modern warfare, were employed by Monammed II. in his wars ugainst the Greek empire; and it is said that he was indebted to his heavy ordnance for the reduction of Constantinople. The prophet, therefore, is to be considered
and artillery are so mingled together that while flashes of fire and dense clouds of smoke issued from the camon, the horses heads alone would be dimly discerned through the sulphurous mist, and would seem to the eye of the spectator to belch forth the smoky flames from their own mouth. Wo may now see how far history confirms this interprctation. "Among the implements of destruction," says Mr. (iibbon, "he (Mohummed II.) studied with peculiar care the recent and tremendons discovery of the Latins; and lis artillery surpussed whatever had appeared in the known world." "The Ottoman artillery thuadered their cimnonade on all sides, and the campland city, the Greeks and 'Iurks, were"involved in a cloud of smoke which could only be dispelled by the final deliverance or destruction of the Roman empire." "The great camon of Mohammed has been separately an important and visible object in the history of the times. But that enorwons engine, which required, it is said, seventy yoke of oxen and two thousand men to draw it, was flamked by the fellows almost of equal maguitude: the long order of 'Iurkish artillery was pointed against the wall; fourteen batteries thundered at once on the most accessible placos; and of one of these it is ambiguously expressed, that it was mounted with a hundred and thirty guns, or that it discharged a hundred and thirty bullets."

Ber. 19. For their jower is in their nueth, wal in their tails; for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with thent they do hurt.-'The emblematic import of the tail of a beast we have ulready considered. The imagery in the present symbol is slightly different from that of the Siaracen locusts, which had tuils of scorpions ; but the import is the same. Here the tails of the horses terminated in a serpent's head; and it ls not a little remarkable, that the Turks have been in the habit, from the earliest period of thoir history, of tying a knot in the extremity of the long flowing tuils of their horses, when preparing for war; so that thair resemblance to serpents with swelling heads must have been singularly striking. Strining two is the fact, that so slight a eir cumstance shoull have beon adverted to by the historian so often quoted, who thought as little of beinis :on organ twillustrace the predictions of Scripture, ns the 'Iurks themselves rid of being ngents to fulfil them. Speaking of Alp Arslan, the first R'abish iivader of the Ronam Empire, he says, "With his own inants he" ticd up his horse's tail, and declared that if he wore vanquisied, that spot should be the place of his burial:" The scope of the hieroglyphic here employed is to predict the propagation of': deadly impusture by the instrumentality of the same warlike power which should achieve such prodigious ennquests. The event has corresponded with the prophey. Like the Saracens of the first wn, the Turiss were not merely secular conquerors. 'They were animated with all the wild finaticism of a false religion; they professed and propagated the sa ne theolegrion: aystem as their A rabian predecessors; they injured by their doctrines ess than by their conquests; ond wherever they established th. ciominion, the Koran triumphed over the Gospel. 'Thus writes Mr. Gibbon: "The wbole body of the nation embraced the religion of Mohammed." "Twentyfive years after the death of Basil, hiis successors were suddenly as. saulted by an unknown race of harbarians, who united the Srythim raloug with the fienaticism of nem menerts."
es of the and dense sheads alone would would scem to the om their own mouth. etution. "Among he (Molammed II: is discovery of the d appeared in the their cannonade oll mks, werc"involved by the final deliverno great camon of visible object in the hich reguired, it is draw it, was flauked ag order of 'Iurkish itteries thundered at 2 of these it is am. a hundred and thirnity bullets." lleir tails; for their a already do hurt.-The brent fiom considerent the th ut the import is the in a serpent's head, ave been in the hatit, a knot in the extrein preparing for war, ug heads must have that so slight a ciristorian so often quo. istra e the predictions g agents to fulfil then. rr the Roman Em5 horse's tail, and dec. $d$ be the place of his mployed is to predict nsidumentality of the prodigious conquests.
Like the Saracens ar conguerors. They ese tha their Arabian ciomini by their contibbon: "'The Koran ammed." "Twenty. were suddenty is. united the Sryphim

Sulficient proof has now bern aflioded, il we mistake not, that the appearance of the Arabian prophet in the world, anol the rise, progress, and results of his inposture, are elearfy foretold in the Sucred volnme. Indeed, it wonld not be easy to specify any admitted sulyject of prophecy, upon which history und Providence have thrown a stronger or clearer light, than that which we have considered in the preceding pages. Interpreters have beeu justly struck at the surprising exactnese of the delineations. and their perfect areordance with the details of history. "The prophetic triths," says Dr. Zouch, "eomprised in the ninth chapter of the Apocalypse are, of themselres, sufficient to stamp the mark of divinity upon that book. When I compare them with the pare of history, I am filled with amazement. The Saracens, a people which did not exist in the time of John, and the 'Turks, a nation then utterly unknown are there described in language the most approprinte and distiact." If then the considerations commonly adduced to account for the rise, progress, and reign of Mohammedanism ajpear to be inadequate,- if the human causes usually quoted to explain the astonishing success of Mohammedan imposture still seem to us to leavenemiy of the phenomena inexplicuble, and the greatest revolution in the world eomnected with the histopy of the Chureh stands forth an unsolved problem,-why should we hesitate to ascribe it directly to the determinate will and counsel of the Most High, and thus find a clew to all the mysteries connected with it? Why shonld we be anxious to eseape the recognition of a Divine interference in the rise of this arch-heresy? If we have been correct in our interpretation of the preceding predictions of Daniel and John. the Mohammedandelusion is as real and as prominent a subject of prophecy as any in the whole compass of the Bible.
Now, to insist apon the operstion of hmman canses in the production of an event which is truly a suliject of phophecy, is in fact to take the garerament of the world out of the hands of God. And this prineiple pushed to the extreme will inevitably lower and impogn the suro wod of prophecy; for it :aakes God the predictor of events over which, at thil same time, he has no special superintendence or control. Such a principle cannot stand the least exmminution. When Daniel foretells the fortunes of the four great minjires; or when lsaiah speaks of Cyrus by mane, as one who ehonld accomplish dertain great purposes of the Infinite Hind, is it to he supposed, the events predicted were to happen exchasiva of Providential ageney? As easily and as justly heu may we actunwledge at sumetal pre-ordanment in the case of Hobammed, whose still more firmidable dominion and more lasting ond more fatal agenioy ta the athais of men, are equally the theme of rquestionable predictions. Nammission of this nature militates with he free agency ofman, or at ali afiects the moral character of his acions. The mere fiet that an event is foreknown or foretold by the Daity, neither takes away nor weakens the aceountability of the aents concerned. Of this, the whole Seripture is full of proofs. But he reflecting reader will desire no farther confirmation of so plain a position.

## THIE CAABA.

Cana ig the name givell to a vory anciont temple, in the city of Nece ma, the origin of which is lost in the darinness of wemote nges. Cenfu. ries betore Mohamined was horn, and while the Arnbs were yet ln geans, this building was held to possess a peculiar sanctity : pilgrimages tvere made to it from distant regions: and that tribe or lamily wasur. counted the most honourable, who were the kecpers of its keys. Itis an oblong, massive wituchare, built of harge blocks of different sized stones, joined rudely together, and is about cighteen paces in length, fomteen in breadth, and from thirty five to forty feat in height. It has but one loor, on the north side, seven tiet above the ground, wholly piated with silver, and embellished with gilt ornaments. From the door's being placed, not in the centre, but near to one corner of the buidding, it appesars not to have been originally designed for a suered use; but at what time, or for what reasons, it became thus appropriated, it is not possible now to determine. Near the door, in the angle of the wall of the no:th-east corner of tise Cabbr, about seven spans from the ground, is the celpbruted "Dhack stone," so drvoutly kissed by every pigrim visiting the sacred city. It is of an ovnlshape, ahout seven inches in diameier, composed of about seven small stonea, of dif. ferent sizes and shapes, well joined together with cement, and perfectly smooth; appearing as if the origiaul stone had been broken into many pieces by a violent blow, and then united again, which indeed is reperted to have been the fact. A border ol some kind of cement. rising a litte above the varfice of the stone. surrounds it, nod both this and the stone ure encireled by a silver band.

According to the fobulous legends of the Mussulmans, the "black stone" was brought down from Heaven by Gabriel, at the creation of the world; and was then of a pure white, but has contracted its present sable hue from the guilt of the sins committed by the sous of men. If a conjecture, however, may be hazarded, we should not hesitate to refer its origin to that peculiar trait in the character of the Ishmaelites, which has ever led them to imitate the Israclites. Scarcely a feature in the religious institutions, usnges, or traditions of the Jews, but hns its spuinus counterpart in those of the sed of Hagar. Jacob's pillar of'stone, at Bethel; would of course become celebrated among his descendants. In like manner, from causes now unknown, we may imagine this stone to have reccived a similar sanctity among the Arabs. This is rendered more probable from the circumstance, that one ol the names given to the Caaba, in Araback language, is Beit-Allah, house of God; a word of the same import and similar sound with Bethel, from which the Greek term Baitula was frequently applied to sacred stones or memorial-pillars, like that of Sacob.

The double roof of the Caaba is supported within by three octangular pillars of aloes-wood, between which, on a bar of iron, hang a num. ber of sllver lamps. The four sides without are covercd with a rich black silk stuff hanging down to the ground, and encircled near the tof
with un embromered baid of rold. which emmpasses the whole huintmg. 'This covering, which is renewed every year, was formenty sup. phind by the Caliphs, witerward hy the Sultans of Egypt but is now - wht fom Catio, at the expense of the Gand reignior, at the time of the IIadj, whea the old one is cint into small pieces and sold to the pilgrims ior neally as much money as the ne w one coste. 'Ihise curtain or veil, called Kesoma, is blazoner! all over with the words, "There is no (iod, !out God," sec. in gold !etters of great size; and such a sacrednes ntaches to it, that the camel which thansporte it to Mecca is "rer after exempted from habour. 'This circamstance of the Casba being covered in the momer deseribed sugyests the probablity, that the structure was intended as a role imitation of the Jewish Tubernacle, which was olso enveloped in cmbroidered curtains without, whide within wats a golden cannlestiek, with seven brancher, liept eorstantiy hurning,

The Caaba, at a slight distanev, is samomiled wite a cirentar enclosure of thirty two slender gilt pillars, between every two of which are suspended seven lamps, upon small bars of silver connecting the pilhars towards the top. 'ihese lamps are always lighted after sunset. This suceed paling reminds us ugnin of the 'I'abernacle ; the court of which, though of an ohlowergintead of a circular forn, was coustructed of pillars, ant hang with cartains, with only a single place of erptrance. Within this enclostre of the Canba, and almost contiguons to its base, lies the "white stone," said to be the sepmlehe of Ishmael, wheh receives the rain-wate: filling off the flat roof of the edifice through a spon?, formerly of wonl, but now of gold. Aucording to the account ot Burckhardt, the eftect of the whole scene, the mysterious dripery, the profosion of gold and silver, the blaze of lamps, and the hnceling multitules, surpasses a:ay thing the inagination conld have pictured.
At a small distance from the Cauba, on the cast side, is the station or place of Abrabam, whom the Arabs afllm to have been the builder of the tomple, where there is another stone mnch respected by the Moslems, as they pretend that the pariarch stood upon it while employed about the building, and proless to show the prints of his footsteps to this day. Just without the circular court, on its south, north, and west sides, are three buildings designed as oratories, or places of payer, where the pilgrin worshippers pertorn their devotions. Besides these there uri several emall buildings near to the main structure, in one of which is the lamous well ol'Zemzem, said by the Mussulnans to he the very spring which the angel discovered to Hagar in the wilderness, and whose waters of conrse possess the most miraculous virtues. They cure all diseases, both of body and spirit, and supply the whole town for drinking and oblation. It is said to be the only sweet water in the whicle valley; but Pitts, an linglish traveller, found it brackish, and says, the pilgrims drink it so inordinately, that "they are not only nueh parged, but their flefh hreaks out all in pimples; and this they ealled the purging if their spiritual corruption." They not only drink, but have buckets of water poured over them, and then think their sins are washed into the well. One of the miracles of Meccilis, that the water of this well never diminishes; liut this is not surprising to the true believers, who regrard it as having been miracmously created to save the infant 1shmael when dyits of thirst in
the wilderness. Burckhardt, however, explains it without a miracle, by supposing that the water flows through the bottom, being supplied by a subterraneous rivulet. The water, he suys, is perfectly sweet, but heavy to the taste, slightly tepid, and sometimes in its colour resembles milk. 'The pilgrims frequently destroy the ropes, buckets, and other appendages of the well in their eagerness to quaffits holy water.

Surrounding all the objects now described, which occupy the centre of an open space, is the square colonnade or grand piazza, consisting of a quadruple row of columns on one side, and a triple row on the other three sides, united by pointed or Gothic arches, every four of which support a dome, plastered white-the number of these domes amounting to one hundred and fifty-two, and the pillars to four hundred and fortyeight. From the arches of these colonnades are suspended lamps, some of which are lighted every night, and the whole of them during the nights of the Ramadan. The columns are upwards of twenty feet high, and somewhat more than a foot and a half in diameter; some are of a reddish gray granite, some of red porphyry, and others of white marble. No two capitals or bases are exactly alike ; in some cases, by the ignorance of the workmen, the former have been placed upside down on the shafts. The arches and some parts of the walls are gaudily painted in stripes of yellow, red, and blue, which, as we have already seen, are colours peculiar to Mohammedanism, At each of the four corners of this immense quadrangula: court, towering above the pillared domes, rises a lofty minaret, surmounted with a gilded cresent, the invariable accompaniament of the Moslem temple.
"The high antiquity of the Caaba," says Mr. Forster, ": is undisputed. The pormanent character of its rites is certified by oar knowledge of the adherence ef the Arabs, in evcry age, to their ancient custons. But, from the uniform consent of Mahomctan writers, it farther appears that the statues of Abraham and Ishmael, which from remote antiquity had held a conspicuous place in the Caaba, and constituted the principal object of its idol worship, remained to the time of Mahomet, and were there found by the Mussulmans after the capture of Mecca. Mahomet, Abulfeda tells us, when he took Mecea in the eighth year of the Hejira, found and destroyed in the Caaba, on his entering the temple, the image of Abraliam holding in his hand seven arrows without heads or feathers, sucb as the Arabs use in divination, and surrounded with a great number of angels and prophets, as inferior deities, among whom, as Al Janabi and other writers add, was Ishmael with divining arrows also in his hand.
" Various external signs, betokening its patriarchal origin, may be traced in the Ante-Mahometan worship of the Caaba. Among these one custom is sufficiently remarkable to claim distinct notice in this place, inasmuch as it has been alluded to and censured in the Koran. The pagan Arabs were used to compass the Caaba naked, because clothes, they said, were the signs of their disobedience to God. The celebrated black stone of the Caaba also, the primitive source and object of Arabian idolatry, strongly indicates the origin to which it has been uniform-
ithout a miracle, $\mathbf{m}$, being supplied - perfectly sweet, es in its colour rohe ropes, buckets, ss to quaffits holy
occupy the centre piazza, consisting ple row on the other very four of which se domes amounting : hundred and forty-- suspended lamps, hole of them during vards of twenty feet diameter; some are and others of white e; in somo cases, by e been placed upside the walls are gaudily as wo have already At each of the four ring above the pillara gilded cresent, the

Forster, '; is undispufied by oar knowledge their ancient custonis. ters, it farther appears from remote antiquity constituted the princl. ime of Mahomet, and pture of Mecca. Mathe eighth year of the s entering the temple, arrows without heads and surrounded with a with, among whom,
archal origin, may be ba. Among these one ct notice in this place, ed in the Koran. The aked, because clothes, God. The celebrated ree and object of Arach it has been uniform-
ly referred. The Arabs attribute its introduction into the temple of Mecca to the immediate posterity of Ishmacl. 'The peculiar kind of superstition is just what might be expected to arise from the abuse of an early patriarchal custom-that of setting up stones on particular spots in honour of the true God. While the connexion is farther made out by the exact correspondence in this particular between tho idolatry of the ancient Israelites and that of the Ante-Mahometan Arabians, their identity might be largely shown from the Old 'Testament; but a passage from the prophecy of Isaiah will suffice. The prophet thus indignantly reproves the Jows for their idolatry:-'Among the smooth stones of the stream is thy portion : they, they are thy lot : even to them thou hast poured a drink offering, thou hast offered a meat offering.'"

## 'HEE KORAN.

'The wod Koran, derivedfiom the velhkan, to rau', propreiy sisnilies the reading, legrad, or thut which ourtht to br roced; by which mane the Mohaminedans denote not ouly the: eatire look or volume of the Korad, but nifo nay purticular chapier or suction of'it, just ns the Jews, in their tangunge, eall the whole tirripture, or any purt of it, ly the nane of Karah, or Slikra, wenda of precisely the same orlyin und im. port ns Koran. 'This hook mast herera, ded as the rude of laws, beli glon, and morality, which Mohammed, in his chameter of legishutor and prophet, promaloated th the people of drabin. in it is therefore the only book oflaw amoner the Wusnhmens, and comprehends ulso the religious doetrines which they nre mught to believe, it followe, that with them a doctor in the law is also a doctor in therology, which wo profersions nre wholly inseparable. This law, upon which is fombed all their thenogy and jurispublene is emprised in the Koran. in the same manner as the civil eode of the dews is comprisedin the five brohy of Mosere.

The collection of moral traditions, compesed of the sayings and artions of the prophet, und foming a kind of supplement to the kurna, the Moslems call the Symath; just :ss tire dewe lave dencminated the book eontrising their oral traditions, the Atrsimu.

The entire Kratan is divideld into one handred and thitern portions. which aro denominnted saras, or dapters: amblhese nenia into smat ler divisions, called Ifyt, inswering wearly, thongh not exactly, to oms verses.

There appears to be an entive aberne of any thang like design or me. thod in either the larger or the smather divisinus: Neither the time at which they were deliverch. nor fle matter diey eontain, was the rule by which they werearmanel. They were, in fict, ipparmily hirown together without order or moming. Gue verse has eddomany romnexion with the preceding; and the same subpent, unless it be some narrative, such us that of A hrahm. Joseph. or Phmoh. distorted firom the sacred Beribtures, is in no case centimed far a dogen verses in succession; each one uppears an isolated precept or exchamation, the tendency and pertinence of $\because$ lict it is often digant nud traquenty ins. possible to discoser. The tioct nine titles with ronvey to the render a fair conception of the armurement, and something of the nature, of the subjects embrnced in the whele. 1. The Preface. 2. The Chw. 3. The Family of Iram. 4. The Women. is. 'rathe. 6. Cattle. 7.41 Araf. 8. The Spoils. 9. The Beclaration of lmamity.

As to the phan or stracture of his peendo arectation, it is remakable that Bohammed makes God the spenker thromghout. 'This should he horne in mind by the reader in perving the extracts given in the preceding work. The adtrosess sire for the mose part malle diretly to the prophet, informing him what he is to con:municute to his cometrymen und the wordd: in. other rases, the peecpis, premines. of theret.
rainge are addreased immodintely to the mbelievere, of the fathfal, ne:ording is the burden of them nuplise to the one or the other. The fiblouing citutions miny sprvens $n$ sperimen of the whole book. "Now we koow that whint they spenk grievelh thee: yet, they do mot aceuso bure of halsohood: but the angodly contridict the signs of (iond. And apoules before thee have becn necounted lines : hut they patiently boro theit accounted heine lines, nal their being vexed, until our help cume math them:" "Say, Verily I min forbidden to worship the false deitles which ye invoke besiden dioni. Siny. I will not tolicow your desires; fir then should I err, neither shoulid I be one of those who are rightly lirected. Biny, I belleve acrording to the phain elecharation whieh I have recelved fran my ford: but ye have forged lies concerning him." The word." Sing;" whic, is nhmont of perpetiml oceurrence in the Ko. rin. is generally prefixed to the sentences or puragraphs contnining it messare to the prople; and the word "Answer" is employed wherreer any hypothetical or foreseen ohipetionsure to be obvinted, or any thontinil questions to be resolved. "They will nek thee ulso what they shall bestow in alms: nnswer, What ye have to spare. 'They will aiso ask the concerning orphans : answer, 'To deul righteously with then is best ; and if ge intermedille with the managemeat of what belangs to them, do them no wrong; they are yourbrethren: Godknoweth the eorrupt denter from the righteons; and if God plouse he will surely distress you. fior God is mughty nnd wise." 'Io others the Divine mandates me usuully conched in the following style: "O men, now is the upostle come unto you with trufh from the Lord; believe, therethre ; it will be hetter for you." "We have formerly destrnyed the peneritions who were before you, O men of Necea, when they had neted unjustly, and our apostles had coine unto them with evideut mir. acles, and they would not believe. Thus do we reward the wieked people." "O true believers, ware war ugninst sach of the infidels as are near you: and let them find severity in yon: and know that God is with those that fenr him." "() true believers, raise not your voices nhove the voice of the prophet ; neither speak loud unto him in discourse, is ye spenk loud unto one another, lest your works become rain, and ye perceive it not."
Inmediately after the title, at the head of every chapter, with tho single exception of the ninth, is wrefixed the solemn form. "In the names ofthe Most Merciful God." 'This torm is called by the Mohammednns, Bismillah, and is invaribhiy placed hy them at the beginning of all their hooks and writings in geveral, as a peculiar mark ordistinguished clanructeristic of their religion : it heing deemed a speries of impiety to omit t. The Jews, for the sinme purpose, smake use of the form, "In the fane of the Loril," or, "In the name of the great God :" and the Easern Christians that of: "In the name of the Father, and of the Son, Mad of the Holy Ghost."
In its general outline of facts, the Kornn corresponds with the Old Pestument in the following historical details: the accounts of the ereaion of the wortd ; of the fill of A dain; of the general deluge; of the latherance of Nouh and his family in the ark; the call of Abraham; he stories of Isame and Ishmael: of Jacob and the patriarchs; the election of the Jews ns God's chosen people; the prophetic office, niracles, and administration of Moses; the inspiration and anthovity
of the Hedrew historinas, prophets, nul pwalmists, especinily of David and Solomon; and, lastiy. of the promise of the alvent of the Messiah, with inany of the necompanying predictions respecting it.

Agnin, with the New'lestament the Koran aoncurs in the recognttion of Jesus Clarist as the promised Mesmiah of the Jews; In his miruculous conception hy the breuth or Epirit of God: his immaculate na. tivity of the Virgius Mary; his title of Loogos, or Word of God; in the miraculons birth of John the Hupilst, son of Kacharias, as hia fore. runner ; in his perforinnnco of many mig!ty signs and miraclea, such ns healing ther nock, raising the dead, und controlling and custing out devile; in his rajection and persecution by his own countrymen; his condeinnation to the denth of the cross: his bodily uscension into heuven: his officiating there as a Mediator and Intercessor botween God and anan, and as Judge of all men at the last day. After the exnmpie, hower, of some of the anciout heretics, Mlohamined, ne appents from the following passages, deaied the reality of the Savour's crucifixion: -" And tor that they have not believed in Jesus, ind have spoiken $n$ grinst Mary agrievious calumny; and have said, Verily, we have slain Christ Jesus, the son of Mary, the apostle of Ciod; yet they slew him not, neither erneified him, hot he was represented by one in his likeness, They did not really kill him ; but God took him up to himself: and God is mighty and wise." "And the Jews devised a stratagem against him; but God devised a stratagern against them; and Goll is the best deviser of stratagems." This stuatagem, according to the Mosleins, was God's taking Jesus up into heaven, and stamping his likpness on another person, who was apprehended and crucilied in his sterd. 'Iheir constant tradition is, that it was not Jesus him. self who underwent that Ignominous death, but somebody else in his, shape and resemblance.

These numerons coincidences of the Koran with the facts and doc. trines of the Bible are strangoly interspersed with matter the most in. congruous; with extravagant fables, monstrous perversions of the truth, and ridiculous and ondless pererilities. This is accounted for on the supposition, that whilo the authentic facts were derived immediately from the canonical Scriptures, the fictions and absurdities were deduced in part from the traditions of the Talmudic and Rabbinical writers; and in part from the apocryphal Gospels, or from the books of Adam, of Seth, of Enoch, of Noah, and other similar fabrications, well knownin church history as having been extensively in uso among the heretics of the first centurics.

A specimen or two of the manner in which some of the best-known narratives of the Old 'I'estament apponr in the Koran, may not be unsuitably adduced here. "Our messengers also came formerly unto A. braham with good tidings. They said, Peace be upon thee. And heanswered, And on you be peace! and he tarried not, but brought a roast ed calf. And his wife Saralı was standing by; and she laughed: ani we promised her Isaac, and after Isaac, Jacob. She said, Alas! shall I bear a son, who am old: this my husband also boing advanced in years? Verily, this would be a wonderful thing. The angels answer ed, Dost thou wonder at the effect of the command of God? The mer cy of Gorl and his blessings be upon your. And when his apprehension
especinaliy of David ent of the Messiah, ting it.
cure in the recogni. , Jews ; In his miruhis limmaculate na. Ford of God; in the charias, as his fore. and miracles, such ling and casting out vn countrymen; hils ecension into heaven: botween God and After the exnimpie, d, ne appears from Javour's crucifixion: and have spoken in aid, Verily, we have t Cod; yet they slew scoted by one in his took him up to hinJews devised $u$ stra. 1 against them; and ratagem, according to hend, and stamping wed and crucilied not Jesus him. with the facts and doc. ith matter the most in. crversions of the truth nccounted for on the e derived immediately surdities were deduced abbinical writers; and ae books of Adam, of cations, well knownin among the heretics of
me of the best-known Koran, may not be urcame formerly unto upon thee. And hear. ot, but brought a roast: and she laughed : and She said, Alas! shall lso boing advanced in . Tho angels answer: nd of God? The mer when his apprehension
had departed from Aloraham, and the good tidings of I Aasac's birth had come unto him, he disputed with us concerning the people of loot ; for Abraham was a pitiliul, compnssionate, and devont person. 'I'he angels said unto him, $O$ Albraham, nbstann from this; for now is the comnand of thy Lord come, to put their sentence in execution, nad an inevitable punishment is ready to fall upon thein. And when our mensengers came unto Lot, he was troubled for them; and his arm was straitened soncerning them; and he said, I'his is a grievous day. And his poople came unto him, rushing upon hims : and they had formerly been guilty of wickedness. Lot said unto thein, $\mathbf{O}$ my people, these my daughters aro more lawful for you: therefore fear God, and put me not to shaine by wronging my guests. Is there not a man of prudence among you?They unswered, thon knowest that we have no need of thy daughters ; and thou well knowest what we would have. He said, It I had strength sufficient to oppose thee, or I could have recourse minto a powerfiul support, I would certainly do it 'The mugels said, 0 Lot, verily we aro the messengers of thy Lord; they shatl by no means come in unto thee.(io forth, therefore, with thy tamily, in some part of the night, and let not any of you turn back: but as for thy wife, that slall happen unto ler which shall happen unto thom. Verily, the prediction of their punishment shall be fulfilled in the morning.
"And Abraham said, Verily I am going unto my Lord who will disect me. U liord, grant me a righteous issue! Whereiore we acguainted him that he should have a son, who should be a meek youth. And when he had attained to yeurs of discretion, and join in acts of eligion, with him, Abraham said unto him, 0 my son, verily I satw in a tream that I should offier thee in sacrifice : consider therefore what thon Irt of opinion I should do. He answered, O my father, do what thou ft conmanded : tho a shall find me, it God please, a patient porson.Ad when they had subnitted themselvos to the divine will, and Abraam had taid his son prostrate on his ficee, we cried unto him, O Abraam, now hast thou verified the vision. 'Jhus do wa reward the righteus. Verily, this was a manifest trial. And we ransomed him with a oble victim."
The following passage may serve to illustrate the correspondence of to Koran with the historical relations of the New 'I'estament:-
"Zacharias called on his Lord, and said, Lord, give me from thee a ood offspring, for thou art the hearer of prayer. And the angels called him, while he stood praying in the chamber, saying, Verily, God ronises thee a son, named John, who shall bear witness to the word hich cometh from God, ; an honourable person, chaste, and one of the ghteous prophets. Ho answered, Lord, how shall I have a son, when dage hath overtaken me, and my wife is barren? The angel said, 0 God doth that which he pleaseth. Zacharias answored, Lord, give e a sign. The angel said, 'Ihy sign shall be, that thou speak unto no an for three days, otherwise than by gesture. And when the angels id, 0 Mary, verily, God hath chosen thee, and hath purified thee, and th chosen thee above all the women of the world: when the angels
said, O Mary, verily, Giod sendeth the grood tidings, that thou shat bear tue wond, proceeding from himself; his name shall be Christ Jesus, the son of Mary; honourable is the world and in the world 10 come, and one of those who approach near the presence of God: She answered, Lord, how shall I have a son, since a man hath not touched me? The angel said, So God createth that which he pleaseth: when he decreeth a thing, he only saith unto it, Ba, and it is: God shall tench him the Scripture, and wisdom, and the law, and the Gospel; and he shall appoint him his apostle to the children of Israel."

But hesides agrecments with the Old and New Testaments of this pal. pable kind, the Koran betrays its obligations to the sacred volumo by numerous coincidences, more of less direct, with the sentiments, the imagery, and the phruscology of Scripture. Indeed, the most interesting light in which the Koran is to be viewed is a spurious resemblaure of the inspired oracles of Jews and Christians. The extent to which the Bible of Mohammedans is made up of plagiarisms from the true revelation can scarcely be conceived by one who has not instituted a spe. cial inquiry into the contents of each, with the express desige, of tracing the analogy between them. Of the fact, however, of the Koran being constructed, in great measure, from the matorials furmished by the 0 id and New Testaments, no one can doubt, who is assured that the for. bwing is but a specimen of hundreds of similar correspondencies whifi might easi'y be made out between the two.

BIBLE.
Take heed that ye do not your alms before men to be seen of thom; otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.
Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of Godamong you by miracles and wonders, and signs which God did by him.

Thou shalt give life for life, tooth for tooth, foot for foot, burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe.

But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the Old Testament. But even unto this day when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart.
They said therefore unto him, What sign showeth thon then, that we may see and believe thee ?
In the beginning God created the heaven and tho earth. And God said, Let there be light, and there was light.
And when he (Moses) was full forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren, the children of Israel.
And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fiece countenance

## KORAN.

Make not your alms of none effect, br reproaching or mischief; as he that layedid out what he hath, to appear unto mento give alms.

We gave unto Jesus, the son of Marr manifest signs, and strengthened bim with the Holy Spirit.

We have therein commanded them tins they should give life for life, and eyc is eye, and nose for nose, and car for c : and tooth for tooth, and that wound should be punished by retaliation.
'There is of them who hearkeneth unt thee when thou readest the Koran; by we have east veils over their hearls, bux they should not understand it, and deat ness in their ears.

The infidels say, Unless some sign by sent down unto him from his Lord, $t$ will not believe.
It is he who hath created the liearem and the earth: And when-ever he sayed unto a thing, Be, it is.

1 have already dwelt among you to 0 age of forty years before I received it (im Roran.) Do ye therefore not understand

According to thy dream shall thy La choose thee and teach thee the intery. tation of dark sayings.

## BIBLLE.

us, that thou shait ne shall be Christ and in the world in sence of God: Sha an hath not touched a he pleaseth: when is: God shall teach the Gospel; and he cl." estaments of this pril. he sacred volume by h the sentiments, the ed, the most intorest;purious resemblance The extent to which isms from the true res not instituted a spr. press desigr: of tracing r, of the Koran being a furuished by the 0 a
s assured :orrespondencies whin.

## KORAN

 our alins of none effect, br or mischicf; as ho that layed nath, to appear unto mea innto Jesus, the son of Marr,
ns, y Spirit.
lierein commanded them tha yive life for life, and ege so for nose, and car for cm nished by retaliation
f them who hearkeneth uxte
pou readest the Koran; bo not nnderstand it and defs ears.
els say, Unless some sign fato him from his Lord, IT teve. tho hath created tho hearem : And when-ever he saye , Be, it is.
eady dwelt anong you toty ye therefore not understand ot to thy dream slall thy la and teach thee the intery rit sayings.

## holian

We taught lime the interpretation of dark sayings, but the greater part of them do not understand.

O Lord, thou hast given me a part of the kingdom, and hast taught methe interpretation of dark saymgs.

And his will be the kingdom on the day whereon the trumpet shall be sounded.

The day will come when the earth shall be changed into another earth, and the heavens into other heavens; and men stiall come forth from their graves to appear before the only, the mighty God.That God may reward every ooul according to what it shall have deserved.
Cast not thine eyes on the good things which we have bestowed on several of the unbelievers, so as to covet the same ; noither be thou grieved on their aecount.
Li Goil should punish men for their iniquity, he would not leave on the earth any moving thing.

Out of the ground have we created you, and to the same will we cause you to return.

If ye do well, ye will do well to your own souls ; and if ye do evil, ye will do it unto the same.
Turn aside evil with that which is better.
And it shall be said unto the idolaters, call now upon those whom ye have associated with God : and they shall eall np.on them but they shall not answer.

And the trumpet shall be sounded again, and behold they shall come for:h from thair graves, and shall hasten unto the Lord.

But God will uot fail to perform what he hath threatened : and verily one day with the Lord is as a thousand year of those which ye compute.

Say not of any matter, I will surely do this to-morrow ; ualess thou add, If God please.

They will ask thee concerniag the last hour; at which time its coming is Gxed? Answer, Verily, the knowledge thereof is with my Lord: none shall deciare the fixed time thereof except he.

From the foregoing examples it will appear manifest, that the plagiarisms of the Koran are not limited to the leading facts and narratives of the Bihle, but extend to many of its minuter peculiarities; to its modes of thought, its figures of speech, and even to its very forms of expres. sion. Yet, in several instances, we meet with such egregious blunders, as to plain matters of liact, stated in the sacred volume, as must convict the copyist of the most arrant ignorance, or of downright falsification. Thus he makes the prophet Elijah (Al Kedr) contemporary with Moses, Ishmael to have been offered in sacrifice instead of Istac, Saul to have led the ten thousand down to the river's brink instead of Gideon, and, by the most monstrous anachronism represents Mary, the mother of Jesus, to have been the same person with Miriam, the sister of Moses!

The palpable obligations of this spurious revelation to Holy Writ, and the real or supposed incompetence of its nominal fabricator, have very naturally given birth to enquiries into tho history of its composition. The great mass of writers on Mohammedanism, following the opinion of the Eastern Cbristans, have generally agreed on supposing that in the construction of the Koran, the Prophet was indebted to the assistance of one or more accomplices. It is cortain, from the pages of the work itself, that this was objected to him at the ontset of his career.-"We also know that they say, Verily a cortain man teacheth hion to compose the Koran." "The unbelibvers say, This Koran is no othe: than a forgery, which he hath contrived : and other people hath assisted him therein : but they utter an unjust thing and a fulsehood." But this emplatic disclaimer of the Apostle has failed to produce conviction. Tho unbeliovers of Christendon have continued to side with thoso of Mec. ca, and as many as cight or ten different persons have been designated as having been, some one or more of thom, associated with the impos. tor in the promulgation of his counterfeit oracles. The more general belief has been, that Mohammed received his principal aid from a Nestorian monk, named Sergius, supposed to be the same person as the Boheira, with whom he becane acquainted at an carly period of his life, at Bosra, in Syria. On this, the learned Sale remarks: "If Bo. heira and Sergias were the same men, I find not the least intimation in the Mohammedan writers, that he evor quitted his monastery to go into Arabia, and his acquaintance with Mohammed at Bosra was too early to favour the surmise of his assisting him in the Koran, though Mohanmed might, from his discourse, gain some knowledge of Christianity and the Scriptures, which might be of some use to him thereil." The same writer, however, admits with Prideaux and others, that while Mo. hammed is to be considered as the original projector and the real author of the Koran, he may lave been assisted, in some measure, bf others, though his successful precautions of secrecy make it impossible to determine, at this day, by what agents, or to what extent, this was done. After all, the assertions advanced in respect to the part borne by others in the composition of the Koran have never been authenticated by proofs, and the whole story has the air of an hypothesis framed to meet the difficulties of the casc. And even were the popular belicf on
fest, that the plagiacts and narratives iarities; to its modes ery forins of expresegregious blunders, lume, as must con-- downright falsificacontemporury with stead of Isaac, Saul ak instead of Gideon, its Mary, the mother 1, the sister of Moses!
tion to Holy Writ, and fabricator, have very $y$ of its composition. following the opinion on supposing that in udebted to the assis. from the pages of the ntset of his career.is Koracth liun to comrer people hath no other a falsehood." But his roduce corviction. Thic de with those of Mec. have been dosignated ciated with the impos. s. The more general incipal aid from a Nes. Sale remariod of his $t$ the least intime "If Bois monastery to It Bosra was go into Koran, though wledge of Chrish ct to him therein"" dothers, that wi, "The jector and the d , in some measure, by brecy make it impossible 0 what extent, this wa pect to the part borneb ever been authenticated Fe the popular the popular belicf o:
his question to be admitted, it would not do away all the difficulties which embarrass tho subjoct. For who was capable, in that dark period, of producing such a work? 'This pretended revelation, independently of its plagiarisms from our Scriptures, contains passages as much superior to any remains, whether Jewish or Christian, of the literature of the seventh century, as they utterly inferior to the contents of that sacred volume which the Ko .: i) asphemously assumes to resemble and supplant. The whole suljeet, therefore, of the origin of this romarkable book, with the history of its composition, as well as the question how far Mohammed was acquainted with the Christian Scriptures, must doubtless remnin an unsoived probiem to the end of time.
Of the literary merrits of the Koran, a fair estimate is not easily to be formed from a translation. By those who are acquainted with the original, it is universally acknowlodged to possess distinguished oxcellencies, which cannot be transfused into any other languages. It is confessedly the standard of the Arabic tongue; is written, for the most part, in a pure and elegant style, abounding with bold figures after oriental manner; aiming at a conciseness which often renders it obscure.Thongh written in prose, the sentences usually conclude in a long continued rhyme, for the sake of whici, the sense is often interrupted, and unnecessary repetitions introduced. This feature of the composition, though a disadvantage and a deformity to a translation, is one of its superlative charms in the estimate of the native Arabs, whose ear is singularly susceptible to the harmony of the rhythmical 'cadences with which the periods conclude.
When we pass from the mere sound and diction which mark "the perspicuous book," it is indubitable that its finest passages are devoid of the merit of originality. Sir William Jones remarks ; "The Koran iodeed shines with a borrowed light, since most of its beauties are taken from our Scriptures; but it has great beauties, and the Mussulmans will not be convinced that they are borrowed." In describing the majesty and the attributes of God, and the varioty and grandeur of the creation, it often rises to an expressive elevation; but in almost every instance of this kind, it is evident that some passage of inspiration of corresponding import was in the cye of the writer, and the copy is inferior to the origioal. Yet the res:ll of a candid examination of this pseudo-bible of Mooammedans, even in our English version, would probably be a more favourable impression of the book on the score of its composition, and a conviction that amid the multitude and heinousness of its defects, scarcely common justice had been done by Christian mriters either to the character of its beauties, or the extent in which they obtain. Taken however as à whole, so far from supporting its arrogant claims to a super-human origin and eloquence, it sinks below the level of many confessedly haman productions, to be found in different languages and regions of the earth "With occasional passages of real beauty and power, it is, on the whole, a strange medley, in which the sublime is so nearly allied to the bombastic, the pathetic to the ludicrous, the terrible to the absurd, that each chapter, each page, almost
cach paragraph, is sure to cive rise to the most opposite emotions.-. Hespect, contempt, adrriration, abhorreuce, so rapidly succeed each other, in the perusal, as to leave no fixed or uniform impression on the Mind. ${ }^{\prime *}$

To:ster.

## MOHAMMEDAN CONFESSION OF FAITH; TRANSLATED FROM THE, Arabic.

(From Morgan's Mahometism Explained.)
The Articles of our fiith wbich every good Mussulman is bound to believe and to reccive with an entire assurance are thirteen in number, whereof the first and principal is,
1.-Of God's Existence.

To believe from the heart, to confess with the tonguc, and witha voluntary and stcalfact mind to affirm, that there is but one only Give, Lord and Governor of the miverse, who produced all things from nothing, in whom there is neither image or resemblance, who never begot any person whatsocver, ar he himself was begotion by none; who, hs he never was a son, so ho never had been a father. It is this Jord and Sovereign Arbiter of all things whom we Mussulmans are bound to serve and adore; so that none ampng us may deviate from this article, but every one nust imprint it deeply in his heart ; for it is unquestionable.

> 1I.- (if the Propket .Luhomet and the Forun.

We must believe from our hearts and confess with our mouths that the Mast High God, after having revealed himself to mankind by his ancient prophets, sent us at length his Elected, the blessed Mahomet, with the sacred and divine law, which through his grace he had created, the which is contained in the venerable Kormn, that hath been from him remitted unto us. By this holy law it is that God hath abolished all the preceding ones and hath withdrawn from their doubts and crrers all nations and people in order to guide them to a firm and lasting state of happiness. Wherefore we are obliged exactly to follow the precepts, rites, and ceremonies thereof, and to abandon every other sect or yetigion whatsoever, whether institutod before or sinco this final revelation. By this article we are distingaished and separated from all sorts of idolatry, lying rbapsodies, and false prophecies, and from all those sects, soeieties, and religions different from ours, which are either erroneous, abrogated, or exaggerated, void of faith, and without truth.
osite cmotione.-lly succeed each impression on the

LATED FROM THF,
d.)
ulman is bound to thirteen in number,
tongue, and witha is but one only (iud, all things from no. ce, who never beyot pa by none; who, us
It is this Loord and almans are bound to ate from this article, for it is unquestion.

## Ћог"и.

with our mouths that If to munkind by his he blessed Malionel, grace he had created, thath been from him rath abolished all the loubts and errers all firm and lasting state ly to follow the predon every other seet or since this final reveparated from all sorts es, nnd from all those which are either erand without truth.

> 1H.- if Providence anud Predestinution.

We nust firmly belicve and hold as a certainty that, except God him.self who always $w$ as and always shall be, every thing shall one day be annihilated, and that the Angel of death shall take to himself the souls of mortals destined to a total and universul extinction,* by the command of God, our pewerful Lord and Master, who was able and hatir vouchsafed to produce out of nothing, and in fine to set in from this universal world, with all things therein contained, both good and evil, sweet and bitter; and hath been pleased to appoint two angels, the one on the right, and the other on the left, to register the actions of every one of us, as well the goond as the bad, to the end that judicial cognizance may bo taken theroof, and sentence pronounced thereupon, at the great day of Jadgment. It is therefore necessary to believo preiestination ; but it is not permitted to discourse thercof to any whomasocorl, till after being perfectly well versed in the study of our written law, viz : the Koran, and of our Somah, which is our oral law. Seeing then all things are to have an end, let us do good works, and deport ourselves so that we may live for ever.

## IV.-Of the Interrogation in the Grave.

We must truly and firmly boliceve and hold as certain and assured, the Interrogation of the sepulchre, which will after death be administerdif to every one of us by two angels upon these four importont questions: -1. Who was our Lord and our Giod? 2. Who was our Prophet?3. Which was our religion? 4. On what side was our Keblah? He who shall be in a condition to make answer, that (rod was his only Lord, and Mahomet his Prophet, shall find a great illumination in his tomb, and shall himself rest in glory. But he who shall not make a proper answer to these questions shall be involved in darkness until the day of judgment.
V.-Of the Future Dissolution.

We must heartily believe and hold as certain, that not only shall all thinge one day perish and be annililated, viz. angels, men, and devils, but likewise this shall come to pass at the end of the world, when the angel Israfit shall blow the trumpet in such sort that except the Soverfign God none of the universal creation shall remain alive immediately efter the dreadful noise, which shall wause the mountains to tremble, the earth to sink, and the sca to be changed to the colour of blood. In this Otal extinction, the last who shall die will be Azarael, the Angel of leath; and the power of the Most High God will be evidently manipsted.

## VI.-Of the Future Resurrection.

We are obliged cordially to believe and to hold for certain, that the

[^8] reatures will he reproduced again at the resurrection.
irst before all others whom Giod shall revive in heaven shali bo the Angel of death; and that ho will at that time recall all tho souls in goneral, and re-unite them to the respoctive bodies to which euch belonged; some of which shall be destined to glory, and others to torment. But upon earth, the first whom God will raise shall our blessed prophet Mahomet. As for the earth itself, it shall open on all sides, and shall be changed in a moment; and by God's command fire slanll be kindlod in every part thereof, which shall be extended to its utinest extremitios. God will then prepare a vast plain, perfoctly level, and of sufficiont extent to contuin all creatures summoned to give an account of their past conduct. May this solema, definite, and irrevokable judgment awalion us from our security; for to nothing that hath been created shall favour be show. ed. Every one shall be judged there by the same rule, and withoutex. ception of persons.

## VII.--Of the Day of Judgment.

We must believe from our hearts and hoid for cetrtain, that there shall be a day of judgenent, whereon God shall ordain all nations to appear in a place appointed for this great trial, of sufficiont vastness that His Majesty may there be evident in spendour. It is in this magnificent and spacious station that the universal assembly of all creatures shall be made, about the middle of the day, and in the brightness of noon: and then it is, that accompanied hy his prophet (Mohammed), and in the presence of all mankind, God shall with justice and equity judge all the nations of the earth in general, and eve:y person in particular. To this effect, every one of us shall have a book or catalogue of our actions delivered to us; that of the good in such wise that it shall be received and held in the right hand; that of the wicked, so that it shall be received and held in the left hand. As to the duration of that day, it shall he as long as the continuance of the present age. This shall be a day of sighs and griefs, a day of tribulation and anguish, when the cup of sorrow and misery must be drunk ! ! p, even the very dregs thercof. But this is what shall be particularly experienced by the ungodly and the perverse; every thing shall present to them ideas of sorrow and affliction. To them every thing shall become aloes and bitterness. They shall not obtain one monent of repose. They shall behold nothing that is agreeble, aor hear the voice that shall delight them : their eyes shall seeno. thing but the torments of holl; their ears shall hear nothing but the cries and howlings of devils; and their terrified imaginations shall represent unto them nothing but spectres and tortures.

## VIII.-Of Mahomet's Intercession.

We are bound to belicve, and hold as certain, that our venetable prophet Mahomet shall with success intercede for his people at the great day of examination. This will be the first intercession ; but at the second, God will be entirely relented, and all the faithful Mussulmans shall betransportod into a state of glory, while not one excuse or sup. plication in behalf of other nations shall be accepted. As to the greal.
ven shall bo the As. do souls in goneral, tel belonged; snme orment. But upon d prophet Mahomet. nd shall be changed sindlod in every part remities. God will sufficient extent to of their past conduct. ent awalion us from shall favour be show. rule, and without ex.
atrtain, that there shall all nations to appear it vastness that His in this magnificent and all creatures shall be ightness of noon: and hammed), and in the nd equity judge all the in particular. To this ,gne of our actions dethall be received and at it shall be received pat day, it shall he os shall be a day of sighs en the cup of sorrow egs thereof. But his ungodly and the perf sorrow and aftliction. ruess. They shall not d nothing that is agree. their eyes shall sce no. ar nothing but the cries nations shall represent

## ion.

that our venctable pro. his people at the great ession; but at the see faithful Mussulmans not one excuse or sup. ted. As to the great.
ness of pain which those among us are to undergo, who have been offenders by transgressing the precepts of the Koran, it is known to God alone, as there is none but Ilim who exactly knoweth how long the same is to continue, whether its duration sliall be more or less than that of the examination or judgment. But to us it belongeth to shorten its continuance by good works, by our charity, and by all the endeavours we are capable of:

> IX.-Of the Future Compensation at the lust Judgment.

We must sincerely believe, and hold as a certainty, that we must every one of us give up our accounts before God, concerning the good and evil we have trunsacted in this world. All who have been followers of Mahomet shall be before all others summoned to this examination, hecause they it will be who shall bear witness against all other strange nations. It shall eome to pass on that day, that God will take away out of the balance of him who has slandered his brother some of the good works, and put them unto that of him who hath been slandered; and if the slanderer is found to have no grood works, he will then deduct from the punishment of the slandered, to inelude them in the list of thoso of the slanderer, insomuch that his great justice will be fully manifest. At least; then, that we not run the hazard of this terriblo compensation, let us not think of wronging others, or of diminishing their substance, their bonour, or their good name.

## X.-Of the Balance, and of Purgatory.

We must believe from the heart, and confess with the mouth, that all our actions, good and bad, shall one day be weighed in the balance, the one against the other, insomuch that those whose good works outweigh their bad shall enter into Paradise; and that, on the contrary, they whose bad works shall outweigh their good shall be condemned to the flames of hell. And for those whose scales shall be equally poised, because the good they have done is equivalent to the evil, they shall bo detained in a station situtate in the niddle, between Paradise and hell, where consideration will be made both of their merits and of their demerits, since besides their be confined in that place, they shall have no punishment inflicted on them, nor shall they enjoy any part of the glory ordained for the beatified righteous. It is true that all those among that number who are Mussulmans shall be at length released from their captivity, and shall be introduced into Paradise at the second intercession of our blessed prophet Mahomet. whose great compassion will be signálized by his engaging, in order to our redemption, to supplicate tho power and the mercy of the Most High, as well as his justice, already satisfied by the long eaptivity of the criminals. Wherefore let as from henceforwayd weigh our good works, to the end that we may assiduously strive to increase their weight, and that they may have the advantage over the baid.
XII.-Of the Sharp-edged Bridge, and the unavoidable passage thereof. We are obliged to believe from our hearts and to hold as assured,
that ull mankind in the worla must pass one day over the Sharp-ederd 13ridge, whose lengiti shall be equil to thint of this world, whose breadth shall not exceed thit of one single throail of a spider's web, and whose height slanll be proporitonnble to its extent. The rightcous shall pass over it swifter than a flush of lightnins; but the impious and the un. gorlly, shall not, in ns much time ns the present ase shall endure, be able to sarmount the difflculties thereof, and that through the want of good works. For which reason, they shall fall und precipitate themselves into hell-fire, in conpany with the infidels and blasphemers, will these of tittle faith und bud conscience, who have dono few deeds of charity, because they were void of virtue. There shall te some annong the good, notwithstunding, whose passuge shall be lighter and swlftep than thint of many others, who shall therein meet with temptations and obstructions from every precept which they shall have ill-observed in this life. Cood God! how dreadlul to our sight will this firmidable bridge apperr! What virtue, whut secret greco from the Most High shull we not nee. , be enubled to puss over it?
XII.-Of P'aradise.

We ore to believe and to hold for a certainty, that God did a create Paradise which he prepared for the blessed, from among the number of the faithful, by which are meant the followers of the true religion, and of our holy prophet, Mahomet; where with him they shall be placed in perpetanl light, and in the enjoyment of heavenly delights: for ever beautifal in the vigour of their nge, and begghter than the sun; and where they shall be found worthy to contemplate and adore the face of the Most High God. Asfior those who shall be detained in the tortures of hell, to wit, the sinners and transgressors, who have never. theless believed in one only God, they shall be released at the second intercession of the prophet, by whom they shall immedintely be washed in the sacred laver, from whence bring come furth whiter than snow and more refulgent than the sun, they shall, with tho rest of the blessed, behold themselves seated in paralise, there to enjoy all the glory they can desire. 'Ihis is what shall befall the body composed of clay; and what then shall be the state of our souls? 'Io the which it shall be granted eternally to behold the light and brightness of the divine majesty. Let as then endeavour to do works of such a character, that we may have no cause to fear hell-tire. Let us, I say, chiefly apply ourselves to good works, let us not refise to exert our utmost strength in the exact ohservation thereof. and of the fast of our venerable month of Ramindan, and of the prayers and ceremonies which are ordained; and let us not defrnud the poor of a tenth of all our goods.
XIII.- Of Hell.

IVe inust sincerely helieve and hold for certain, that there is a hell prepared for the unrightcous, the refractory transgressors of the divine law accursed of God for their evil works, and for whom it would hare been better had they never have been born, and to have never seen the light of day. It is for such as those that a place of torment is appointed, or rather a fire which burneth without touching them, a fire of ice and north winds, where there shall be nothing but snakes and serpents, with other venomous and ravenous creatures, which shall bite them without destroying them, and shall cause them to feel grier. ous pains. That place shall be the abode of the impious and of the devils, where these shali, with all sorts of cruelty and rage, incessantly sorture those.
over the Shurpedred ovorld, whose brealth der's web, and whose e righteous shall puss impious and the unase shall endure, be through the want of und precipitate themand blasphemers, with ve dono few deeds of e shall be some ainong be lighter anil swiftep with temptations and tll have ill-observed in It will this formiduble c from the Most High
that God did a create n among the number for the true religion, ith him they shall be of heavenly deliglts: beighter than the sun; inplate and adore the shall be detained in the ssors, who have never. released at the second immedintely be wadh. mo forth whiter than II, with tho rest of the there to enjoy all the t the body composed of als? T'o the which it and brightness of the vorks of such a charac.

Let us, I say, chiefy e to exert our utmost f the fast of our venerI ceremonies which are nth of all our goods.
in, that there is a hell asgreseors of the divine or whom it would have d to have never seen lace of torment is ap. touching them, a fire thing but snakes and creatures, which shall uuse them to feel grier he implous and of the and rage, incessantly



[^0]:    * Decline and Fall, ch. 1.
    $\dagger$ Genesis, svii. 18-20.

[^1]:    * Genesis, xxv. 13--14.
    + Ver. 18.
    \# Wells's' Sac. Gcogr. vol. i. p. 341 .
    $\$$ Ant. Jud b i. ch. 12, $\$ 4$.

[^2]:    b. i. ch. $12, \$ 4$.

[^3]:    *The argument in this chapter is conlensed from a more anple discussiou of tho subject in the Appendix to "Forster's Mallometanism Unveiled."

[^4]:    -The reader will notice that notwithstanding Mohammeu's strenuons assertion God's absolute unity, and his execrations of those who ascribe to him "associates" yet when he introduces lim spealing in the Koran it is usually in the plural number

[^5]:    * "We had at the same time the following striking instance of the frivolous appeals to the Deity among the Mohammedans. A man went round the caravan, crying with a loud voice, 'In the name of God, the just, the merciful. My cup is gone from me: it disappeared while I prayed at sunset (and may God grant my evening prayer). To whoever may find the same, may God lenstion out his life, may God augment his pleasures, and may God bring down affairs of business on his head.' This pompous appeal to Heaven, and prayers for good fortune to the finder of the missing utensil, wore all powerless, however, in their effect. The lost cup was not found; and the consolation then assumed was, 'God knows where it is gone; but it was written in heaven from of old.' "-Buckingham's Travels in Mesopotamia, vol. 1. p. 281, London $182 \%$.

[^6]:    * Earacen is the name bestowed by the ancient foreign writers upon the Arabs Phey may have tolorated the title, but it is not one of their own imposition or of the 1iking.

[^7]:    * "Mohammed is no more than an apestle : the other apostles havo already deceased before him : if tie dic, therefore, or be slain, will ye turn back on your heela ?"Koran, ch. iii.
    "Verily, thou, O Mohammed, shait dee, and they shali die; and ye shall dobate the matter [idolatry] with one another before your Lord at the day of resurrection.'"lid. ch. xxxix.

[^8]:    ' Notwithstanding this annihilation, it is taught in the Koran that all intelligent

